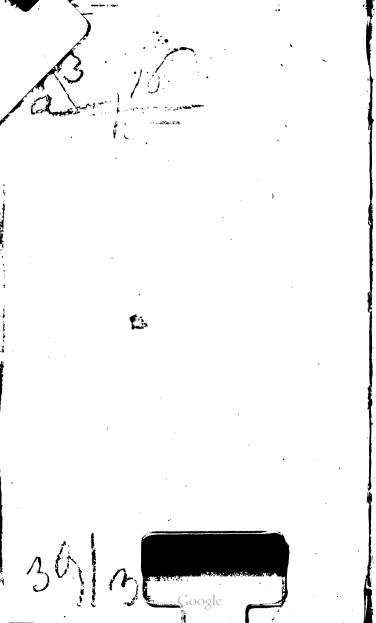
This is a reproduction of a library book that was digitized by Google as part of an ongoing effort to preserve the information in books and make it universally accessible.

Google books



https://books.google.com



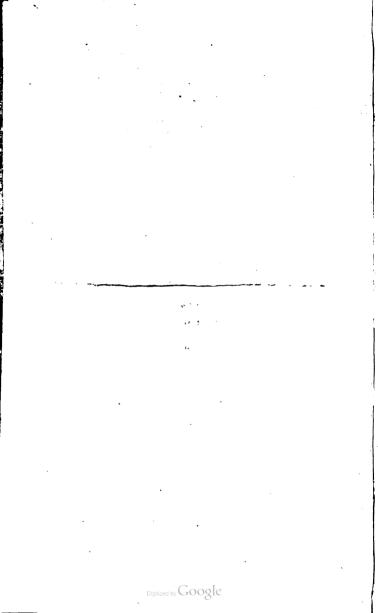


Some Mary · called losi ESSAY Ster ON THE PRINCIPL E S OF  $\mathbf{M}$ ORALITY AND NAT RAL IJ KL L TV. IN TWO PARTS. The SECOND EDITION. With Alterations and Additions.

#### LONDON:

Printed for C. HITCH & L. HAWES, R. & J. DODSLEY, J. RIVINGTON & J. FLETCHER, and J. RICHARDSON.

> MDCCLVIII. 213966 - B.



### ADVERTISEMENT.

IT is proper to acquaint the reader, before he enters on the following estays, that they are not thrown together without connection. The first, by the investigation of a particular fact, is defigned to illustrate the nature of man, as a focial being. The next confiders him as the fubjeft of morality. And as morality supposes freedom of action, this introduces the third essay, which is a disquisition on liberty and necessity. These make the first part of the work. The rest of the effays, ushered in by that on belief, hang upon each other. A plan is prosecuted, in support of the authority of our fenfes, external and internal; where it is occasionally shown, that our reasonings on some of the most important fubjects, rest ultimately upon sense and feeling. This is illustrated in a variety of instances; and from thefe, the author would gladly hope, that he has thrown new light upon the principles of human knowledge : - All to prepare the way for a proof of the existence and perfections of the Deity, which is the chief aim in this undertaking. The author's manner of thinking, may, in some points, be esteemed bold, and new. But freedom

freedom of thought will not difplease those who are led, in their inquiries, by the love of truth. To such only he writes : and with such, he will, at least, have the merit of a good aim; of having searched for truth, and endeavoured to promote the cause of virtue and natural religion.

1754

TEN С O N S. Т Ρ A R Т I. SAY S E I. Pag. Of our attachment to objects of distress SSAY E. II. Of the foundation and principles of the law of nature. Introduction 23 Chap. I. Of the foundation of the law of 26 nature Chap. II. Of the moral fense 29 Chap. III. Of duty and obligation 38 Chap. IV. Of the different ranks of moral virtues 49 Chap. V. Of the principles of action 55 Chap. VI. Of the fource of the laws of nature, according to fome authors 68 Chap. VII. Of justice and injustice 76 Chap. VIII. Of the primary laws of nature 91 Chap. IX. Of the law of nations 103 SAY III. E S Of liberty and neceffity 113: Appendix. Containing the *fubstance* of a pamphlet writ in defence of the foregoing effay 164

PART

₩i	C	0 N	Т	Ė :	N T	S.	
	Þ	A	R	r	ני	I <b>I.</b>	•
Of bel	]	ES	S A	Á Y	Ι.		
Of Del	ief						181
					И.		
Of the	idea o	f self,	and of	f per/	onal ide	entity	189
06.11.		S			III <b>.</b>		
Of the	author	rity of	our j	enfes			193
	E	S	S A	Y	IV.		
Of our	idea o	f pow	er				217
		S					
Of our 1	know la	dge of	futu.	re evi	ents		237
	Ε	S S	<b>S</b> A	Y	VI.		
Of our d	dread ark	of Sup	ernati	ural p	owers i	in the	e
41	41 K						243
		S S			VII.		
Of our k	nowle L	dge of	the I.	Deity			249
0f t	he to	ty of	the De	eity			276
•j.	ne por	Deity	u init	euigen	ice of	the	
Of th	he hend	volenc		<i>l</i> . D	•,		278
					etty		279
CON	СL	USI	[0]	4			<b>2</b> 9 <b>9</b>
							•

Digitized by Google

(

E S S A Y S ON THE PRINCIPLES OF MORALITY AND NATURAL RELIGION.

PART I.

Digitized by Google

# ESSAY I.

Of our ATTACHMENT to OBJECTS of DISTRESS.

NOTED French critic, treating of poetry and painting, undertakes a subject attempted by others unfuccefsfully, which is, to account for the ftrong attachment we have to objects of diffrefs, imaginary as well as real. " It is not eafy (fays he) to account " for the pleafure we take in poetry and paint-" ing, which has often a ftrong refemblance to " affliction, and of which the fymptoms are " fometimes the fame with those of the most " lively forrow. The arts of poetry and paint-" ing are never more applauded than when they " fucceed in giving pain. A fecret charm at-" taches us to reprefentations of this nature, at " the very time our heart, full of anguish, rifes " up against its proper pleasure. I dare under-" take this paradox, (continues our author), and " to explain the foundation of this fort of plea-" fure which we have in poetry and painting; " an undertaking that may appear bold, if not " rafh, feeing it promifes to account to every " man for what passes in his own breast, and for " the A

" the fecret fprings of his approbation and dif-" like." Our author is extremely fensible of the difficulty of his fubject: and no wonder; for it lies deep in human nature.

LET us attend him in this difficult undertaking. He lays it down as a preliminary, That our wants and necessities are our only motives to action, and that in relieving us from them confifts all natural pleafure : in which, by the way, he agrees with Mr Locke, in his chapter of power, fect. 37. and 43. This account of our natural pleasures shall be afterwards examincd. What we have at prefent to attend to, is the following proposition, laid down by our author as fundamental : " That man, by nature, " is defigned an active being : that inaction, " whether of body or mind, draws on languor " and difgust: and that this is a cogent motive " to fly to any fort of occupation for relief. " Thus (adds hc) we fly by inftinct to every " object that can excite our passions, and keep " us in agitation, notwithstanding the pain such " objects often give us, which caufes vexatious " days and fleepless nights: but man fuffers " more by being without passions, than by the " agitation they occasion." This is the fum of his first fection. In the fecond he goes on to particular inftances. The first he gives is compaffion; which makes us dwell upon the miferies and diffress of others, though thereby we arc

2

are made to partake of their fufferings; an impulse that, he observes, is entirely owing to the foregoing principle, which makes us chuse occupation, however painful, rather than be without action. Another is public executions. "We " go in crouds (fays he) to a fpectacle the most " horrid that man can behold, to fee a poor " wretch broke upon the wheel, burnt alive, or " his intrails torn out. The more dreadful " the fcene, the more numerous the fpectators, "Yet one might foresee, even without expe-" rience, that the cruel circumstances of the " execution, the deep groans and anguish of a " fellow-creature, must make an impression, " the pain of which cannot be effaced but by a " long course of time. But the attraction of " agitation prevails more than the joint powers " of reflection and experience." He goes on to mention the strange delight the Roman people had in the entertainments of the amphitheatre ; criminals exposed to be torn to pieces by wild beafts, and gladiators in troops hired to butcher one another. He takes this occasion to make the following observation upon the English nation. " So tender-hearted are that people, that " they observe humanity towards their greatest " criminals. They allow of no fuch thing as " torture ; alledging it better to leave a crime " unpunished, than to expose an innocent per-" fon to those torments which are authorised in " other Christian countries, to extort a con-A 2. " feffion

4

" feffion from the guilty. Yet this people, fo " refpectful of their kind, have an infinite plea-" fure in prize fighting, bull-baiting, and fuch " other favage fpectacles." He concludes with fhowing, that it is this very horror of inaction, which makes men every day precipitate themfelves into play, and deliver themfelves over to cards and dice. " None but fools and fharpers " (fays he) are moved to play by hope of gain. " The generality are directed by another mo-" tive. They neglect those diversions where " fkill and address are required, chusing rather " to risk their fortunes at games of mere chance, " which keep their minds in continual motion, " and where every throw is decifive."

This is our author's account of the matter fairly flated. It has, I acknowledge, an air of truth : but the following confiderations convince me that it is not folid. In the first place, if the pain of inaction be the motive which carries us to fuch spectacles as are above mentioned, we must expect to find them frequented by none but those who are oppressed with idlenes. But this will not be found the truth of the matter. All forts of perfons flock to fuch fpectacles. Pictures of danger, or of distress, have a secret charm which attracts men from the most ferious occupations, and operates equally upon the active and the indolent. In the next place, were there nothing in these spectacles to attract the mind.

### OBJECTS OF DISTRESS. 5

mind, abstracting from the pain of inaction, there would be no fuch thing as a preference of one object to another, upon any other ground than that of agitation; and the more the mind was agitated, the greater would be the attraction of the object. But this is contrary to experience. There are many objects of horror and distalte, which agitate the mind exceedingly, that even the idleft fly from. And a more apt inflance need not be given, than what our author himfelf cites from Livy \*; who, fpeaking of Antiochus Epiphanes, has the following words. Gladiatorum munus Romanæ confuetudinis, primo majore cum terrore hominum insuetorum ad tale spectaculum, quam voluptate dedit. Deinde sæpius dando, et familiare oculis gratumque id spectaculum fecit, et armorum studium plerisque juvenum accendit. Such bloody spectacles behoved undoubtedly to make at first a greater impreffion than afterwards, when, by reiteration, they were rendered familiar. Yet this circumstance was fo far from being an attraction to the Grecians, that it raifed in them aversion and horror. Upon the fame account, the beargarden, which is one of the chief entertainments of the English, is held in abhorrence by the French, and other polite nations. It is too favage an entertainment, to be relished by those of a refined tafte.

• Lib. 41.

Digitized by Google

б

### ATTACHMENT TO

IF man be fuppofed a being, whofe only view, in all his actions, is either to attain pleafure, or to avoid pain; it would, upon that fuppofition, be hard, if not impoffible, to give any fatisfactory account why we fhould chufe, with our eyes open, to frequent entertainments which must neceffarily give us pain. But when we more attentively examine human nature, we difcover many and various impulfes to action, independent of pleafure and pain. Let us profecute this thought, becaufe it may probably lead to a folution of the problem.

WHEN we attend to the emotions raifed in us by external objects, or to any of our emotions, we find them greatly diversified. They are firong or weak, diffinct or confused,  $\dot{\sigma}c$ . There is no division of emotions more comprehensive than into agreeable or difagreeable. It is unnecessary, and would perhaps be in vain, to fearch for the cause of these differences. More we cannot fay, than that fuch is the conflictution of our nature, fo contrived by the Author of all things, in order to answer wise and good purposes.

THERE is another circumflance to be attended to in these emotions; that affection enters into some of them, aversion into others. To fome objects we have an affection, and we defire to posses and enjoy them; other objects raife raife our averfion, and move us to avoid them. No object can move our affection but what is agreeable, nor our averfion but what is difagreeable. Whether it be the effect of every agreeable object to raise affection, we have no occafion at prefent to inquire. But it is of importance to observe, that many objects are disagreeable, or perhaps rather painful, which raife not averfion in any degree. Objects of horror and terror, loathfome objects, and many others, raife averfion. But there are many emotions or passions, some of them of the most painful fort, which have no aversion in their composition. Grief is a most painful passion, and yet is not accompanied with any degree of aversion. On the contrary, we cling to the object which raifes our grief, and love to dwell upon it. Compassion is an inflance of the like nature. Objects of distress raise no aversion in us, though they give us pain. Affection always enters into the paffion, and confequently defire to afford relief.

In infancy, appetite and paffion are our fole impulies to action. But in the progress of life, when we learn to diffinguish the objects around us, as productive of pleasure or pain, we acquire, by degrees, impulses to action of a different fort. Self-love is a strong motive to fearch about for every thing that may contribute to happines. Self-love operates by means of reflection and experience; and every object, fo foon 8

foon as discovered to contribute to our happinefs, raifes in us of courle a defire of posselling. Hence it is, that pleasure and pain are the only motives to action, to far as felf-love is concerned. But our appetites and passions are not all of them of this nature. These frequently operate by direct impulse, without the intervention of reason, in the same manner as instinct does in brute creatures. As they are not influenced by any fort of reafoning, the view of fhunning miserv, or acquiring happiness, makes no part of the impulsive motive. It is true, that the gratification of our passions and appetites is agreeable; and it is alfo true, that, in giving way to a particular appetite, the view of pleafure may, by a reflex act, become an additional motive to the action. But these things must not be confounded with the direct impulse arifing from the appetite or passion; which, as I have faid, operates blindly, and in the way of inflinct, without any view to confequences.

AND to afcertain the diffinction betwixt actions directed by felf-love, and actions directed by particular appetites and paffions, it must be further remarked, that the aim of felf-love is always to make us happy, but that other appetites and passions have frequently a very different tendency. This will be plain from induction. Revenge gratified against the man we hate, is agreeable. It is a very different cafe, where we have

# OBJECTS OF DISTRESS.

have taken offence at a man we love. Friendship will not allow me, however offended, to burt my friend. " I cannot find in my heart to " do him mischief: but I would have him made " fenfible of the wrong he has done me." Revenge, thus denied a vent, recoils, and prevs upon the vitals of the perfon offended. It difplays itfelf in peevishness and bad humour ; which must work and ferment, till time, or acknowledgment of the wrong, carry it off. . This fort of revenge is turned against the man himself who is offended; and examples there are of perfons in this pettish humour, working great mischief to themselves, in order to make the offenders fensible of the wrong. Thus, no example is more common than of a young woman, dilappointed in love, prone to her own milery, and bent to throw herfelf away upon any worthlefs man that will ask her the question. My next example will be still more fatisfactory. Every one must have observed, that when the passion of grief is at its height, the very nature of it is to fhun and fly from every thing which tends to give ease or comfort. In the height of grief, a man rulhes on to milery, by a fort of fympathy with the perfon for whom he is grieved. Why fhould I be happy when my friend is no more ? is the language of this passion. In these circumftances, the man is truly a felf-tormentor. And bere we have a fingular phænomenon in human nature; an appetite after pain, an inclination to. render:

Digitized by Google

9

render one's felf miferable. This goes farther than even felf-murder; a crime that is never perpetrated but in order to put an end to mifery, when it rifes to fuch an height as to be infupportable.

WE now fee how imperfect the description is of human nature, given by Mr Locke, and by our French author. They acknowledge no motive to action, but what arises from felf-love; measures laid down to attain pleasure, or to shun pain. Many appetites and paffions, with the affection and averfion involved in them, are left entirely out of the fystem. And yet we may fay, with fome degree of probability, that we are more frequently influenced by these than by felflove. In this inquiry a difcovery is made of great importance to the fubject in hand, to wit, a direct appetite or desire, in some instances, after pain. So various is human nature, and fo complicated its acting powers, that it is not readily to be taken in at one view.

WE return to our fubject, after having unfolded those principles of action with which it is connected. It may be gathered from what is above laid down, that nature, which defigned us for fociety, has linked us together in an intimate manner, by the fympathetic principle, which communicates the joys and forrow of one to many. We partake the afflictions of our fellows;

# · OBJECTS OF DISTRESS. IF

lows; we grieve with them and for them; and, in many inflances, their misfortunes affect us equally with our own. Let it not therefore appear furprifing, that, inflead of fhunning objects of mifery, we chufe to dwell upon them; for this is truly as natural as indulging grief for our own misfortunes. And it must be obferved at the fame time, that this is wifely ordered by providence: were the focial affections mixed with any degree of averfion, even when we fuffer under them, we fhould be inclined, upon the first notice of an object of distrefs, to drive it from our fight and mind, instead of affording relief.

NOR must we judge of this principle as any way vitious or faulty : for befides that it is the great cement of human fociety, we ought to confider, that, as no flate is exempt from miffortunes, mutual fympathy must greatly promote the fecurity and happiness of mankind. That the prosperity and prefervation of each individual fhould be the care of many, tends more to happinefs in general, than that each man, as the fingle inhabitant of a defert island, thould be left to stand or fall by himfelf, without profpect of regard, or affiftance from others. Nor is this all. When we confider our own character and actions in a reflex view, we cannot help approving this tendernefs and fympathy in our nature. We are pleafed with ourfelves for being fo constituted :

conflituted : we are conficious of inward merit ; and this is a continual fource of fatisfaction.

To open this subject a little more, it must be observed, that naturally we have a strong defire to be acquainted with the hiftory of others. We judge of their actions, approve or difapprove, condemn or acquit; and in this the bufy mind has a wonderful delight. Nay, we go farther. We enter deep into their concerns, take a fide ; we partake of joys and diffreffes, with those we favour, and show a proportional aversion to o. thers. This turn of mind makes history, novels, and plays, the most universal and favourite entertainments. It is natural to man as a fociable creature; and we may venture to affirm. that the most fociable have the greatest share of this fort of curiofity, and the ftrongest attachment to fuch entertainments.

TRAGEDY is an imitation or reprefentation of human characters and actions. It is a feigned hiftory; which generally makes a ftronger imprefion than what is real; becaufe, if it be a work of genius, incidents will be chofen to make the deepeft impreffions, and will be fo conducted, as to keep the mind in continual fufpenfe and agitation, beyond what commonly happens in real life. By a good tragedy, all the focial paffions are excited. The first fcene is fcarce ended before we are engaged. We take

a

Digitized by Google

a fudden affection to fome of the perfonages reprefented. We come to be attached to them as to our bofom-friends, and we hope and fear for them, as if the whole were a true hiftory, inflead of a fable.

To a dry philosopher, unacquainted with theatrical entertainments, it may appear furprifing. that imitation should have such an effect upon the mind, and that the want of truth and reality should not prevent the operation of our passions. But whatever may be the phylical caule, one thing is evident, that this aptitude of the mind of man to receive impressions from feigned, as well as from real objects, contributes to the nobleft purposes of life. Nothing contributes fo much to improve the mind, and confirm it in virtue, as being continually employed in furveying the actions of others, entering into the concerns of the virtuous, approving their conduct. condemning vice, and showing an abhorrence at it; for the mind acquires strength by exercise, as well as the body. But were this fort of difcipline confined to fcenes in real life, the generality of men would be little the better for it. because such scenes rarely occur. They are not frequent even in hiftory. But in compositions where liberty is allowed of fiction, it must be want of genius, if the mind be not sufficiently exercifed, till it acquire the greatest fensibility, and the most confirmed habits of virtue.

В

THUS,

THUS, tragedy engages our paffions, not lefs than true hiftory. Friendship, concern for the virtuous, abhorrence of the vitious, compassion, hope, fcar, and the whole train of the focial paffions, are roused and exercised by both of them equally.

THIS may appear to be a fair account of the attachment we have to theatrical entertainments : but when the fubject is more narrowly examined, some difficulties occur, to which the principles above laid down will scarce afford a fatiffactory answer. It is not wonderful that young people flock to fuch entertainments. The love of novelty, defire of occupation, beauty of action, are strong attractions : and if one be once engaged, of whatever age, by entering into the interests of the personages represented, the attraction becomes ftrong beyond measure, and the ftory must be followed out, whatever be the consequence. The foresight of running into grief and affliction will not disengage. But we generally become wife by experience; and it may appear furprifing, when diftrefs is the neverfailing effect of fuch entertainments, that perfons of riper judgment should not shun them altogether. Doth felf-love lie asleep in this cafe, which is for ordinary fo active a principle ? When one confiders the matter a priori, he will not hefitate to draw a conclusion to this purpose, That as repeated experience must, at the long-run, make

make us wife enough to keep out of harm's way; deep tragedies, for that reafon, will be little frequented by perfons of reflection. Yet the contrary is true in fact; the deepeft tragedies being the most frequented by perfons of all ages, by those especially of delicate feelings, upon whom the strongest impressions are made. A man of that character, who has fcarce got the better of the deep distress he was thrown into the night before by a well-acted tragedy, does, in his closet, coolly and deliberately resolve to go to the next entertainment of the kind, without feeling the strategy of the strategy for the strategy of the st

, THIS leads to a speculation, perhaps one of the most curious that belongs to human nature. Contrary to what is generally underftood, the foregoing speculation affords a palpable proof, that even felf-love does not always operate to avoid pain and diffrefs. In examining how this is brought about, there will be discovered an admirable contrivance in human nature, to give free scope to the social affections. Keeping in view what is above laid down, that of the painful passions fome are accompanied with averfion, fome with affection ; we find, upon the strictest examination, that those painful paffions, which, in the direct feeling, are free from any degree of aversion, have as little of it. in the reflex act. Or, to express the thing more familiarly, when we reflect upon the pain we B 2 have

15

16 ATTACHMENT TO

have fuffered by our concern for others, there is no degree of aversion mixed with the reflection, more than with the pain itself, which is the immediate effect of the object. For illustration's fake, let us compare the pain which arifes from compassion with any bodily pain. Cutting one's flefh is not only accompanied with ftrong averfion in the direct feeling, but with an aversion equally ftrong in reflecting upon the action afterwards. We feel no fuch averfion in reflecting upon the mental pains above defcribed. On the contrary, when we reflect upon the pain which the misfortune of a friend gave us, the reflection is accompanied with an eminent degree of fatisfaction. We approve ourfelves for fuffering with our friend, value ourfelves the more for that fuffering, and are ready to undergo chearfully the like diffrefs upon the like occasion.

WHEN we examine those particular passions, which, though painful, are yet accompanied with no aversion ; we find they are all of the focial kind, arising from that eminent principle of fympathy, which is the cement of human society. The focial passions are accompanied with appetite for indulgence, when they give us pain, not less than when they give us pleasure. We submit willingly to such painful passions, and reckon it no hardship to suffer under them. In being thus constituted, we have the confciousness of regularity and order, and that it is *right* and and *meet* we fhould fuffer after this manner. Thus the moral affections, even fuch of them as produce pain, are none of them attended with any degree of averfion, not even in reflecting upon the diffrefs they often bring us under. And this obfervation tends to fet the moral affections in a very diffinguished point of view, in opposition to those that are either malevolent, or merely felfith.

MANY and various are the fprings of action in human nature, and not one more admirable than what is now unfolded. Sympathy is an illustrious principle, which connects perfons in fociety by ties ftronger than those of blood. Yet compassion, the child of fympathy, is a painful emotion; and were it accompanied with any degree of averfion, even in reflecting upon the diftress it occasions, after the distress is over, that averfion would, by degrees, blunt the paffion, and at length cure us of what we would be apt to reckon a weakness or difease. But the author of our nature hath not left his work imperfect. He has given us this noble principle entire, without a counterbalance, fo as to have a vigorous and universal operation. Far from having any aversion to pain, occasioned by the focial principle, we reflect upon fuch pain with fatisfaction, and are willing to fubmit to it upon all occasions with chearfulnefs and heart-liking, just as much as if it were a real pleafure.

And

AND now the caufe of the attachment we have to tragedy is fairly laid open, and comes out in the strongest light. The focial passions, put in motion by it, are often the occasion of distrefs to the spectators. But our nature is so happily conflituted, that diffrefs occasioned by the exercise of the focial passions, is not an object of the smallest aversion to us, even when we reflect coolly and deliberately upon it. Self-love does not carry us to shun affliction of this fort. On the contrary, we are fo framed, as willingly and chearfully to fubmit to it upon all occasions, as if it were a real and fubstantial good. And, thus, tragedy is allowed to feize the mind with all the different charms which arife from the exercife of the focial paffions, without the leaft obflacle from felf-love.

HAD our author reflected on the fympathifing principle, by which we are led, as by a fecrct charm, to partake of the miferies of others, he would have had no occasion of recurring to fo imperfect a principle as that of aversion to inaction, to explain this feeming paradox, that a man should voluntarily chuse to give himself pain. Without entering deep into philosophy, he might have had hints in abundance from common life to explain it. In every corner, persions are to be met with of such a sympathising temper, as to chuse to spend their lives with the difference.

18

Digitized by Google

in their afflictions, enter heartily into their concerns, and figh and groan with them. Thefe pass their lives in fadness and despondency, without having any other fatisfaction than what arifes upon the reflection of having done their duty.

AND if this account of the matter be just, we may be affured, that those who are most compassionate in their temper, will be fondest of tragedy, which affords them a large field for indulging the paffion. And indeed admirable are the effects brought about by this means : for paffions, as they gather ftrength by indulgence, fo they decay by want of exercise. Persons in prosperity, unacquainted with distress and mifery, are apt to grow hard-hearted. Tragedy is an admirable refource in fuch a cafe. It ferves to humanize the temper, by fupplying feigned objects of pity, which have nearly the fame effect to exercise the passion that real objects. have. And thus it is that we are carried by a natural impulse to deal deep in affliction, occafioned by reprefentations of feigned misfortunes; and the paffion of pity alone would throng fuch representations, were there nothing elfe to attract the mind, or to afford fatisfaction,

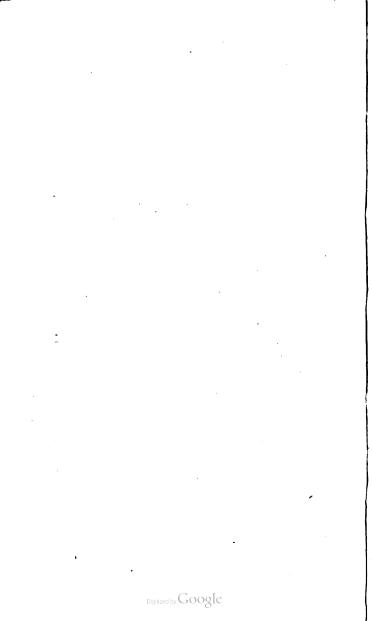
It is owing to curiofity, that public executions are fo much frequented. Senfible people endeavour to correct an appetite, which, upon indulgence, dulgence, gives pain and aversion, and, upon reflection, is attended with no degree of felf-approbation. Hence it is, that fuch spectacles are the entertainment of the vulgar chiefly, who allow themselves blindly to be led by the present inflinct, with little attention whether it contribute to their good or not.

WITH respect to prize-fighting and gladiatorian shews, nothing animates and inspires us more than examples of courage and bravery. We catch the spirit of the actor, and turn bold and intrepid as he appears to be. On the other hand, we enter into the diffres of the vanquished, and have a sympathy for them in proportion to the gallantry of their behaviour. No wonder, then, that fuch shews are frequented by perfons of the best taste. We are led by the fame principle, that makes us fond of perusing the lives of heroes and of conquerors. And it may be observed by the by, that such spectacles have an admirable good effect in training up the youth to boldness and refolution. In this, therefore, I fee not that foreigners have reason to condemn the English taste. Spectacles of this fort deferve encouragement from the state, and to be made an object of public policy .-

As for gaming, I cannot bring myfelf to think that there is any pleafure in having the mind kept in fuspense, and as it were upon the rack, which which must be the cafe of those who venture their money at games of hazard. Inaction and idleness are not by far so hard to bear. I am fatisfied that the love of money is at the bottom. Nor is it a folid objection, That people will neglect games of skill and address, to venture their money at hazard; for this may be owing to indolence, diffidence, or impatience. There is indeed a curious speculation with regard to this article of gaming, that pleafure and pain attend good and bad fuccefs at play, independent of the money loft or win. It is a plain cafe, that good luck railes our spirits, as bad luck depresses them, without regard to confequences: and it feems extremely clear, that our concern at game, when we play for trifles, is owing to this very thing. What may be the root of this affection, is not fo obvious. But as it is not neceffarily connected with our prefent theme, I leave it to be investigated by others.

Digitized by Google

#### ESSAY



# ESSAY II.

### Of the Foundation and Principles of the Law of Nature.

#### INTRODUCTION.

CUPERFICIAL knowledge produces the bold-**D** est adventurers, because it gives no check to the imagination, when fired by a new thought. Shallow writers lay down plans, contrive models. and are hurried on to execution, by the pleafure of novelty, without confidering whether, after all, there be any folid foundation to fupport the spacious edifice. It redounds not a little to the honour of fome late inquirers after truth, that, fubduing this bent of nature, they have submitted to the flow and more painful method of facts and experiments; a method that has been applied to natural philosophy with great fuccefs. The accurate Locke, in the fcience of logics, has purfued the fame method, and has been followed by feveral ingenious writers. The mistrefs-fcience alone is neglected ; and it feems hard that lefs deference should be paid to her than to her hand-maids. F. very author upon morals writes as if it were his privilege to mould this fcience according to his own tafte and fancy. Regulations for human

man conduct are daily framed, without the lcaft confideration, whether they arife out of human nature, or can be accommodated to it. And hence many airy fystems, that relate not more to man, than to any other being. Authors of a warm imagination, and benevolent temper, exalt man to the angelic nature, and compose laws for his conduct, fo refined as to be far above the reach of humanity. Others of a contrary disposition, forcing down all men to a level with the very lowest of their kind, assign them laws more fuitable to brutes than to rational beings. In abstract science, philosophers may more in, nocently indulge their fancies. The worft that can happen is, to millead us in matters where error has little influence on practice. But they who deal in moral philosophy ought to be cautious ; for their errors feldom fail to have a bad tendency. The exalting of nature above its standard, is apt to difgust the mind, confcious of its weaknefs, and of its inability to attain fuch an uncommon degree of perfection. The debafing of nature tends to break the balance of the affections, by adding weight to the felfish and irregular appetites. A cruel effect this, but not the only bad one. The many clashing opinions about morality are apt to tempt readers who have any hollowness of heart, to shake off all principles, and to give way to every appetite as it comes uppermoft : and then adjeu to a just tenor of life, and confiftency of conduct.

THESE

THESE confiderations give the author of this ellay a just concern to proceed with the utmost circumspection in his inquiries, and to try his conclusions by their true touchstone, that of facts and experiments. Had this method been frictly followed, the world would not have been perplexed with that variety of inconfistent fyftems, which unhappily have rendered morality a difficult and intricate science. An attempt to reftore it to its original fimplicity and authority. must be approved, however short one falls in the execution. Writers differ about the origin of the laws of nature, and they differ about the laws themfelves. It will perhaps be found, that, about the former, there is lefs difference in reality than in appearance. It were to be wished, that the different opinions about the latter could be as happily reconciled. But as the author acknowledges this to be above his reach, he must take up with a lefs agreeable tafk; which is, to attempt a plan of the laws of nature, drawn from their proper fource, without regarding authority.

Ċ

Digitized by Google

CHAP.

# CHAP. I.

# Of the Foundation of the Law of NATURE.

I<sup>N</sup> fearching for the foundation of the laws of our nature, the following reflections readily occur. In the first place, two things cannot be more intimately connected than a being and its actions: for the connection is that of caufe and effect. Such as the being is, fuch must its actions be. In the next place, the feveral classes into which nature has distributed living creatures, are not more diffinguishable by an external form, than by an internal constitution. which manifelts itself in a certain uniformity of conduct, peculiar to each species. In the third place, any action conformable to the common nature of the species, is confidered by us as regular and good. It is according to order, and according to nature. But if there exift a being, with a conflitution different from that of its kind, the actions of this being, though conformable to its own peculiar constitution. will, to us, appear whimfical and diforderly. We shall have a feeling of difgust, as if we faw a man with two heads or four hands. These reflections lead us to the foundation of the laws of our nature. They are to be derived from the common nature of man, of which every perfon partakes who is not a monfter.

Digitized by Google

As the foregoing observations make the groundwork of all morality, it may not be improper to enlarge a little upon them. Looking around, we find creatures of very different kinds, both as to their external and internal conflictutions. Each fpecies having a peculiar nature, ought to have a peculiar rule of action refulting from its nature. We find this to hold in fact; and it is extreme agreeable to observe, how accurately the laws of each fpecies are adjusted to the external frame of the individuals which compose it, and to the circumftances in which they are placed, fo as to procure the conveniencies of life in the best manner, and to produce regularity and confiftency of conduct. To give but one instance : The laws which govern fociable creatures, differ widely from those which govern the favage and folitary. Among folitary creatures, who have no mutual connection, there is nothing more natural, or more orderly, than to make food one of another. But for creatures in fociety to live after this manner, behoved to be the effect of jarring and inconfistent principles. No fuch diforderly appearance is difcovered upon the face of this globe. There is, as above obferved, a harmony betwixt the internal and external conftitution of the feveral classes of animals : and this harmony obtains fo univerfally, as to afford a delightful prospect of deep design, effectively carried into execution. The common nature of every class of beings is perceived by us C 2 as

Digitized by Google

27

as perfect; and if, in any inftance, a particular being fwerve from the common nature of its kind, the action, upon that account, is accompanied with a fenfe of diforder and wrong. In a word, it is according to order, that the different forts of living creatures should be governed by laws adapted to their peculiar nature. We confider it as fit and proper that it should be fo; and it is a beautiful fcene to find creatures acting according to their nature, and thereby acting uniformly, and according to a just tenor of life.

THE force of this reasoning cannot, at any rate, be relifted by those who admit of final causes. We make no difficulty to pronounce, that a species of beings are made for such and fuch an end, who are of fuch and fuch a nature. A lion is made to purchase the means of life by his claws. Why? because such is his nature and conflitution. A man is made to purchafe the means of life by the help of others, in fociety. Why? becaufe, from the conflitution both of his body and mind, he cannot live comfortably but in fociety. It is thus we difcover for what end we were defigned by nature, or the author of nature. And the fame chain of reafoning points out to us the laws by which we ought to regulate our actions : for acting according to nature, is acting to as to answer the end of our creation.

CHAP.

#### CHAP. II.

#### Of the MORAL SENSE.

HAVING fhown that the nature of man is the foundation of the laws that ought to govern his actions, it will be neceffary, with all poffible accuracy, to trace out human nature, fo far as regards the prefent fubject. If we can happily accomplifh this part of our undertaking, it will be eafy, in the fynthetical method, to deduce the laws which ought to regulate our conduct. And we fhall examine, in the first place, after what manner we are related to beings and things around us : for this fpeculation will lead to the point in view.

As we are placed in a great world, furrounded with beings and things, fome beneficial, fome hurtful; we are fo conflituted, that fcarce any object is indifferent to us. It either gives pleafure or pain. Sounds, taftes, and fmells, are either agreeable or difagreeable. This is the most of all remarkable in the objects of fight, which affect us in a more lively manner than the objects of any other external fenfe. Thus. a. fpreading oak, a verdant plain, a large river, are objects which afford great delight. A rotten carcafe, a difforted figure, create aversion, which, in fome cafes, goes the length of horror. C 3 WITH

30

WITH regard to objects of fight, whatever gives pleasure, is faid to be beautiful; whatever gives pain, is faid to be ugly. The terms beauty and ugliness, in their original fignification, are confined to objects of fight. And indeed fuch objects, being more highly agreeable or difagreeable than others, deferve well to be diffinguished by a proper name. But though this be the proper meaning of the terms beauty and ugline/s; yet, as it happens with words which convey a more lively idea than ordinary, the terms are applied in a figurative fense to almost every thing which carries a high relish or difgust, where these fensations have not a proper name of their own. Thus, we talk of a beautiful theorem, a beautiful thought, and a beautiful paffage in music. And this way of fpeaking has. by common use, become fo familiar, that it is scarce reckoned a figurative expression.

OBJECTS confidered fimply as exifting, withcut relation to any end propoled, or any defigning agent, are to be placed in the loweft rank or order with refpect to beauty and uglinefs. But when external objects, fuch as works of art, are confidered with relation to fome end propofed, we feel a higher degree of pleafure or pain. Thus, a building regular in all its parts, pleafes the eye upon the very first view : but confidered as a houfe for dwelling in, which is the end propofed, it pleafes still more, supposing it to

# LAW OF NATURE.

to be well fitted to its end. A fimilar fendation arifes in obferving the operations of a well-ordered flate, where the parts are nicely adjusted to the ends of fecurity and happinefs.

This perception of beauty, in works of art or defign, which is produced not barely by a fight of the object, but by viewing the object in a certain light, as fitted to fome ule, and as related to fome end, includes in it what is termed approbation : for approbation, when applied to works of art, means precifely our being pleafed with them, or conceiving them beautiful in the view of being fitted to their end. Approbation and difapprobation do not apply to the first or lowest class of beautiful and ugly objects. To 'fay that we approve a fweet tafte, or a flowing river, is really faying no more, than barely that we are pleafed with fuch objects. But the term is juftly applied to works of art, because it means more than being pleafed with fuch an object merely as existing. It imports a peculiar beauty, which is perceived, upon confidering the object as fitted to the use intended.

IT must be further observed, to avoid obscurity, that the beauty which arises from the relation of an object to its end, is independent of the end itself, whether good or bad, whether beneficial or hurtful: for the perception arises from

Digitized by Google

• :0<sup>1</sup>1

31

from confidering its fitnels to the end propoled, whatever that end be.

WHEN we take the end itfelf under confideration, there is difcovered a beauty or uglinefs of a higher kind than the two former. A beneficial end propofed, strikes us with a very peculiar pleasure : and approbation belongs also to this feeling. Thus, the mechanism of a ship is beautiful, in the view of means well fitted to an end. But the end itself, of carrying on commerce, and procuring fo many conveniencies to mankind, exalts the object, and heightens our approbation and pleasure. By an end, I mean that to which any thing is fitted, which it ferves to procure and bring about, whether it be an ultimate end, or fubordinate to fomething farther. Hence, what is confidered as an end in one view, may be confidered as a means in another. But fo far as it is confidered as an end, the degree of its beauty depends upon the degree of its usefulnels. Approbation, in many instances, terminates upon the thing itself, abstracted from the intention of an agent. This intention; as good or bad, coming into view, gives rife to a species of beauty or deformity. different from those above set forth; as shall be prefently explained. Let it be only kept in view, that as the end or use of a thing is an object of greater dignity and importance than the means, the approbation bestowed on the former former rifes higher than that bestowed on the latter.

THESE three orders of beauty may be blend-. ed together in many different ways, to have very different effects. If an object in itself beautiful, be ill fitted to its end, it will, upon the whole, be difagreeable. This may be exempli-fied, in a houfe, regular in its architecture, and beautiful to the eye, but incommodious for dwelling. If there be in an object an aptitude to a bad end, it will, upon the whole, be difagreeable, though it have the fecond modification of beauty in the greatest perfection. A conftitution of government, formed with the most perfect art for inflaving the people, may be an inftance of this. If the end proposed be good, but the object not well fitted to the end, it will be beautiful or ugly, as the goodness of the end, or unfitnels of the means, are prevalent. Of this inflances will occur at first view, without being fuggested.

THE foregoing modifications of beauty and deformity, apply to all objects, animate and inanimate. A voluntary agent produceth a peculiar fpecies of beauty and deformity, which may readily be diftinguifhed from all others. The actions of living creatures are more interesting than the actions of matter. The inftincts, and principles of action of the former, give us more delight,

33

34

delight, than the blind powers of the latter; or, in other words, are more beautiful. No one can doubt of this fact, who is in any degree converfant with the poets. In Homer every thing lives. Even darts and arrows are endued with voluntary motion. And we are fensible, that nothing animates a poem more than the frequent use of this figure.

HENCE a new circumftance in the beauty and deformity of actions, confidered as proceeding from intention, deliberation, and choice. This circumstance, which is of the utmost importance in the fcience of morals, concerns chiefly human actions : for we discover little of intention deliberation and choice, in the actions of inferior creatures. Human actions are not only agreeable or difagreeable, beautiful or deformed, in the different views above mentioned, but are further diflinguished in our perception of them, as fit, right, and meet to be done, or as unfit, unmeet, and wrong to be done. Thefe are fimple perceptions, capable of no definition, and which cannot otherways be explained, than by making use of the words that are appropria. ted to them. But let any man attentively examine what paffeth in his mind, when the object of his thought is an action proceeding from deliberate intention, and he will foon difcover the meaning of thefe words, and the perceptions which they denote. Let him but attend to a deliberate

deliberate action, fuggested by filial piety, or fuggested by gratitude; such action will not only be agreeable to him, and appear beautiful, but will be agreeable and beautiful, as fit, right, and meet to be done. He will approve the action in that quality, and he will approve the actor for having done his duty. This diftinguishing circumstance intitles the beauty and deformity of human actions to peculiar names: they are termed moral beauty and moral deformity. Hence the morality and immorality of human actions; and the power or faculty by which we perceive this difference among actions, passfeth under the name of the moral fense.

IT is but a fuperficial account which is given of morality by most writers, that it depends upon approbation and difapprobation. For it is evident, that these terms are applicable to works of art, and to objects beneficial and hurtful, as well as to morality. It ought further to have been observed, that the approbation or disapprobation of actions, are very diffinguishable from what relate to the objects now mentioned. Some actions are approved as good, and as fit, right, and meet to be done; others are difapproved, as bad and unfit, unmeet and wrong to be done. In the one cafe, we approve the actor as a good man; in the other, disapprove him as a bad man. These perceptions apply not to objects as fitted to an end, nor even to the end itfelf, except

Digitized by Google

36 LAW OF NATURE.

except as proceeding from deliberate intention. When a piece of work is well executed, we approve the artificer for his fkill, not for his goodnefs. Several things, inanimate as well as animate, ferve to extreme good ends. We approve thefe ends as ufeful in themfelves, but not as morally fit and right, where they are not confidered as the refult of intention.

Or all objects whatever, human actions are the most highly delightful or difgustful, and posfess the highest degree of beauty or deformity. In these every circumstance concurs: the fitness or unfitness of the means; the goodness or badness of the end; the intention of the actor; which gives them the peculiar character of fit, right, and meet, or unfit, wrong, and unmeet.

THUS we find the nature of man fo conflituted, as to approve certain actions, and to difapprove others; to confider fome actions as *fit*, *right*, and *meet* to be done, and to confider others as *unfit*, *unmeet*, and *wrong*. What diftinguistheth actions, to make them objects of the one or the other perception, will be explained in the following chapter. And with regard to fome of our actions, another circumstance may perhaps be difcovered, different from any that have been mentioned, which will be a foundation for the well-known terms of *duty* and *obligation*, and consequently for a rule of conduct,

conduct, that, in the strictest sense, may be termed a law. But at present it is sufficient to have explained in general, that we are fo constituted, as to perceive a right and wrong in actions. And this is what ftrongly characterifes the laws which govern the actions of mankind. With regard to all other beings, we have no data to discover the laws of their nature, other than their frame and conflitution. We have the fame data to discover the laws of our own nature. We have, over and above, a peculiar fense of approbation or disapprobation, to point out to us what we ought to do, and what we ought not to do. And one thing extremely remarkable will be explained afterwards, that the laws which are fitted to the nature of man, and to his external circumstances, are the same which we approve by the moral fenfe.

D

Digitized by Google

CHAP.

37

### C H A P. III.

# Of DUTY and OBLIGATION.

**T**HOUGH thefe terms are of the utmost importance in morals, I know not that any author hath attempted to explain them, by pointing out those principles or perceptions which they express. This defect I shall endeavour to fupply, by tracing these terms to their proper fource, without which the fystem of morals cannot be complete, because these terms point out to us the most precise and effential branch of morality.

LORD Shaftefbury, to whom the world is much indebted for his ineftimable writings, has clearly and convincingly made out, " that virtue " is the good, and vice the ill of every one." But he has not proved virtue to be our duty, otherways than by fhowing it to be our intereft; which comes not up to the idea of duty. For this term plainly implies fomewhat indifpenfable in our conduct; what we ought to do, what we ought to fubmit to. Now, a man may be confidered as foolifh, for acting againft his intereft; but he cannot be confidered as wicked or vigious. His Lordship indeed, in his effay upon virtue

# LAW OF NATURE.

virtue \*, approaches to an explanation of duty and obligation, by afferting the fubordinacy of the felf affections to the focial. But though he ftates this as a proposition to be made out, he drops it in the after part of his work, and never again brings it into view.

HUTCHESON, in his effay upon beauty and virtue  $\dagger$ , founds the morality of actions on a certain quality of actions, which procures approbation and love to the agent. But this account of morality is imperfect, becaufe it fcarce includes juffice, or any thing which may be called duty. The man who, confining himfelf ftrictly to duty, is true to his word, and avoids harming others, is a juft and moral man; is initiled to fome fhare of effeem; but will never be the object of love or friendfhip. He muft fhow a difpofition to the good of mankind, of his friends at leaft, and neighbours; he muft exert acts of humanity and benevolence, before he can hope to procure the affection of others.

BUT it is chiefly to be observed, that, in this account of morality, the terms right, obligation, duty, ought and should, have no diffinct meaning; which shows, that the entire foundation of morality is not taken in by this author. It is true, that, towards the close of his work, he

\* Page 98.

† Page 101.

D 2

attempts

attempts to explain the meaning of the term obligation. But as criticizing upon authors, those efpecially who have promoted the caufe of virtue, is not an agreeable tafk; I would not chufe to fpend time, in flowing that he is unfuccefsful in his attempt. The flightest attention to the fubject will make it evident. For his whole account of obligation is no more than, either "a " motive from felf-interest, sufficient to deter-" mine all those who duly confider it, to a cer-" tain courfe of action;" which furely is not. moral obligation : or " a determination, with-" out regard to our own interest, to approve " actions, and to perform them; which deter-" mination shall also make us displeased with " ourfelves, and uneafy upon having acted con-" trary to it;" in which fense, he fays, there is naturally an obligation upon all men to benevolence. But this account falls far fhort of the true idea of obligation; becaufe it makes no diftinction betwixt it and that fimple approbation of the moral fense, which can be applied to heroifin, magnanimity, generofity, and other exalted virtues, as well as to juffice. Duty however belongs to the latter only; and no man reckons himfelf under an obligation to perform any action that belongs to the former.

NEITHER is the author of the treatile upon human nature more fuccelsful, when he endeavours to refolve the moral fense into pure fympathy

# LAW OF NATURE.

p3 hy \*. According to this author, there is no more in morality, but approving or difapproving an action, after we discover, by reflection, that it tends to the good or hurt of fociety. This would be by far too faint a principle to control our irregular appetites and passions. It would fcarce be fufficient to reftrain us from incroaching upon our friends and neighbours; and, with regard to strangers, would be the weakest of all reftraints. We shall, by and by, show, that morality has a more folid foundation. In the mean time, it is of importance to observe. that, upon this author's fystem, as well as Hutchefon's, the noted terms of duty, obligation, ought and should, oc. are perfectly unintelligible.

WE fhall now proceed to explain these terms, by pointing out the perceptions which they express. And, in performing this task, there will be discovered a wonderful and beautiful contrivance of the author of our nature, to give authority to morality, by putting the felf affections in a due subordination to the social. The moral sense has, in part, been explained above; that by it we perceive some actions, as being *fit*, *right*, and *meet* to be done, and others, as being *unfit*, *unmeet*, and *wrong*. When this obfervation is applied to particulars, it is an evident fact, that we have a fense of *fitnes* in kindly

• Vol. 3. part 3.

D 3

Digitized by Google

and

1

41

and beneficent actions; we approve outfelves and others for performing actions of this kind: as, on the other hand, we disapprove the unfociable, peevish, and hard-hearted. But in one fet of actions, there is an additional circumstance which is regarded by the moral sense. Actions directed against others, by which they are harmed in their perfons, in their fame, or in their goods, are the objects of a peculiar perception. They are perceived not only as unfit to be done, but as absolutely wrong to be done, and what, upon no account, we cught to do. What is here afferted, is a matter of fact, which can admit of no other proof than an appeal to every man's own perceptions. Lay prejudice alide, and give fair play to what passes in the mind. I ask no other concession. There is no man, however irregular in his life and manners, however poifoned by a wrong education, but must be fensible of this fact. And indeed the words which are to be found in all languages, and which are perfectly underftood in the communication of fentiments, are an evident demonstration of it. Duty, obligation, ought and *(hould*, in their common meaning, would be empty founds, unlefs upon fupposition of fuch a perception.

THE cafe is the fame with regard to gratitude to benefactors, and performing of engagements. We perceive these to be our *duty* in the strictest fense,

# LAW OF NATURE

fenfe, and what we are indifpenfably *obliged* to. We do not confider them as in any degree under our own power. We have the confcioufnels of neceffity, and of being bound and tied to performance, as if we were under fome external compulsion.

It is proper here to be remarked, that benevolent and generous actions are not objects of this peculiar fenfe. Hence, fuch actions, though confidered as *fit* and *right* to be done, are not however confidered to be our *duty*, but as virtuous actions beyond what is ftrictly our duty. Benevolence and generofity are more beautiful, and more attractive of love and efteem, than juflice. Yet, not being fo neceffary to the fupport of fociety, they are left upon the general footing of approbatory pleafure; while juffice, faith, truth, without which fociety could not at all fubfift, are objects of the foregoing peculiar fenfe, to take away all fhadow of liberty, and to put us under a neceffity of performance.

DR Butler, a manly and acute writer, hath gone farther than any other, to affign a juft foundation for moral duty. He confiders confcience or reflection \*, " as one principle of ac-" tion, which, compared with the reft as they " ftand together in the nature of man, plainly

• Preface to the later editions of his fermons.

--1

" bears

43

" bears upon it marks of authority over all the " reft, and claims the absolute direction of them " all, to allow or forbid their gratification." And his proof of this proposition is, " that a " difapprobation of reflection is in itfelf a prin-" ciple manifeftly fuperior to a mere propen-Had this admirable writer handled the " fion." fubject more profeifedly than he had occasion to do in a preface, it is more than likely he would have put it in a clear light. But he has not faid enough to afford that light the fubject is capable of. For it may be observed, in the first place, that a difapprobation of reflection is far from being the whole of the matter. Such difapprobation is applied to morofenefs, felfihnefs. and many other partial affections, which are, however, not confidered in a strict fense as contrary to our duty. And it may be doubted. whether a difapprobation of reflection be, in every cafe, a principle superior to a mere propenfion. We difapprove a man who neglects his private affairs, and gives himfelf up to love, hunting, or any other amusement: nay, he disapproves himfelf. Yet from this we cannot fairly conclude, that he is guilty of any breach of duty, or that it is unlawful for him to follow his propenfion. We may observe, in the next place, what will be afterwards explained, that confcience, or the moral fense, is none of our principles of action, but their guide and director. It is still of greater importance to observe, that the authority authority of confcience does not confift merely in an act of reflection. It arifes from a direct perception, which we have upon prefenting the object, without the intervention of any fort of reflection. And the authority lies in this circumftance, that we perceive the action to be our duty, and what we are indifpenfably bound to perform. It is in this manner that the moral fenfe, with regard to fome actions, plainly bears upon it the marks of authority over all our appetites and paffions. It is the voice of God within us which commands our ftricteft obedience, juft as much as when his will is declared by express revelation.

WHAT is above laid down is an analysis of the moral fense, but not the whole of it. A very important branch still remains to be unfoldcd. And, indeed, the more we fearch into the works of nature, the more opportunity there is to admire the wifdom and goodness of the fovereign architect. In the matters above mentioned, performing of promifes, gratitude, and abftaining from harming others, we have not only the peculiar fenfe of duty and obligation : in tranfgreffing thefe duties, we have not only the fense of vice and wickedness, but we have further the fense of merited punishment, and dread of its being inflicted upon us. This dread may be but flight in the more venial transgreffions. But, in crimes of a deep dye, it rifes to a degree of

46 LAW OF NATURE.

of anguish and despair. Hence that remorfe of confcience, the most fevere of all tortures, which histories are full of, upon the commission of certain crimes. This dread of merited punishment operates for the most part to strongly upon the imagination, that every unufual accident, every extraordinary misfortune, is by the criminal judged to be a punishment purposely inflicted upon During prosperity, he makes a shift to him. blunt the ftings of his confcience. But no fooner does he fall into distress, or into any depresfion of mind, than his confcience lays fast hold of him : his crime stares him in the face; and every accidental misfortune is converted into a real punishment. " And they faid one to an-" other, We are verily guilty concerning our " brother, in that we faw the anguish of his foul, " when he befought us; and we would not hear: " therefore is this diffrefs come upon us. And " Reuben answered them, faying, Spake I not " unto you, faying, Do not fin against the child ; " and ye would not hear? therefore behold " alfo, his blood is required "."

ONE material circumftance is here to be remarked, which widens the difference still more betwixt the primary and secondary virtues. As justice, and the other primary virtues, are more essential to fociety, than generosity, benevolence,

, Digitized by Google

\* Genefis xlii. 21. 22.

or any other fecondary virtue, they are likewife more universal. Friendship, generosity, softness of manners, form peculiar characters, and ferve to diffinguish one man from another. But the fense of justice, and of the other primary virtues, is univerfal. It belongs to man as fuch. Though it exists in very different degrees of ftrength, there perhaps never was a human creature absolutely void of it. And it makes a delightful appearance in the human conftitution, that even where this fense is weak, as it is in some individuals, it notwithstanding retains its authority as the director of their conduct. If there be any fense of justice, or of abstaining from injury, it must distinguish right from wrong, what we ought to do from what we ought not to do; and, by that very diffinguishing faculty, justlv claims to be our guide and governor. This confideration may ferve to justify human laws, which make no distinction among men, as endued with a stronger or weaker sense of morality.

AND here we must pause a moment, to indulge fome degree of admiration upon this part of the human fystem. Man is evidently intended to live in fociety; and because there can be no fociety among creatures who prey upon one another, it was necessary, in the first place, to provide against mutual injuries. Further, man is the weakest of all creatures separately, and the very strongest in fociety; therefore mutual affistance affiftance is the principal end of fociety; and to this end it was necessary, that there should be mutual trust and reliance upon engagements, and that favours received should be thankfully repaid. Now, nothing can be more finely adjusted, than the human heart, to answer these purpofes. It is not fufficient that we approve every action which is effential to the prefervation of fociety. It is not fufficient, that we disapprove every action which tends to its diffolution. Approbation or difapprobation merely, is not fufficient to fubject our conduct to the authority of a law. But the approbation in this cafe has the peculiar modification of duty, that these actions are what we ought to perform, and what we are indifpenfably bound to perform. This circumstance converts into a law, what without it can only be confidered as a rational measure, and a prudential rule of conduct. Nor is any thing omitted to give it the most complete character of a law. The transgression is attended with apprehension of punishment, nay with actual punishment; as every misfortune which befalls the transgreffor is confidered by him as a punishment. Nor is this the whole of the matter. Sympathy is a principle implanted in the breast of every man: we cannot hurt another without fuffering for it, which is an additional punishment. And we are still further punished for our injustice or ingratitude, by incurring thereby the averfion and hatred of mankind. CHAP.

# CHAP. IV.

# Of the DIFFERENT RANKS of MORAL VIR-TUES.

I T is a fact which will be univerfally admitted, that no man thinks fo highly of himfelf, or of another, for having done a juft, as for having done a generous action: yet every one must be fensible, that juffice is more effential than generofity, to the order and prefervation of fociety; and why we should place the greater merit upon the less effential action, may appear unaccountable. This matter deferves to be examined, because it discloses more and more the fcience of morals; and to this examination we shall proceed, after making fome further observations upon the fubject-matter of the preceding chapter.

THE primary virtues, as observed in that chapter, being effential to the subsistence of fociety, are entirely withdrawn from our election and choice. They are perceived as indispensably obligatory upon us; and the transgreffion of the laws which regulate this branch of our conduct, is attended with severe and never-failing punishment. In a word, there is not a characteristic of positive law which is not applicable, in the strictes fense, to these laws of nature; with this material difference, E that 50

### LAW OF NATURE.

that the fanctions of thefe laws are greatly more efficacious than any that have been invented to enforce municipal laws. The fecondary virtues, which contribute to the improvement of fociety. but are not strictly necessary to its subsistence are left to our own choice. They have not the character of necessity impressed upon them, nor is the forbearance of them attended with a fense of guilt. On the other hand, the actions which belong to this class, are objects of the strongest perceptions of moral beauty ; of the higheft degree of approbation, both from ourfelves and others. Offices of undeferved kindnefs, requital of good for evil, generous toils and fufferings for the good of our country, come under this clafs. Thefe are not made our duty. There is no motive to the performance, which, in any proper fenfe, can be called a law. But there are the ftrongest motives that can confist with perfect freedom. The performance is rewarded with a confciousness of felf-merit, and with the praife and admiration of all the world, which are the higheft and most defirable rewards human nature is susceptible of.

THERE is fo much of enthusiafm in this branch of moral beauty, that it is not wonderful to find perfons of a free and generous turn of mind captivated with it, who are lefs attentive to the primary virtues. The magnanimous, who cannot bear restraint, are guided more by generofity

generofity than by justice. The fense however of strict duty is, with the bulk of mankind, a more powerful incitement to honefly, than praife and felf-approbation are to generofity. And there cannot be a more pregnant example of wifdom than in this part of the human constitution ; it being far more effential to fociety, that all men' be just and honest, than that they be patriots and heroes.

FROM what is above laid down, the following observation naturally arises, that with refpect to the primary virtues, the pain of transgreffing our duty is much greater than the pleafure which refults from obeying it. The contrary is the cafe of the fecondary virtues. The pleafure which arifes from performing a generous action is much greater than the pain of neglect. Among the vices opposite to the primary virtues, the most striking appearances of moral deformity are found; among the fecondary virtues, the most striking appearances of moral beauty.

WE are now prepared to carry on the speculation fuggested in the beginning of this chapter. In ranking the moral virtues according to their dignity and merit, one would readily imagine. that the primary virtues should be intitled to the highest class, as being more effential to fociety than those that are fecondary. But, upon examination, we find that this is not the order of E 2

52

nature. The first rank in point of dignity is affigned to the fecondary virtues, which are not the first in point of utility. Generofity, for example, in the fense of mankind, hath more merit than iuffice : and other fecondary virtues, undaunted courage, magnanimity, heroifm, rife still higher in our esteem. Is not nature whimfical and irregular, in ranking after this manner the moral virtues? One at first view is apt to fuspect fo. But, like other difficulties which meet us in contemplating the works of nature. this under confideration arifes from partial and obscure views. When this matter is examined with attention, and the whole is furveyed as well as its feveral parts, we at the longrun difcover, that nature, if in any cafe, has here taken her measures with peculiar forefight and wildom. Let us only recollect what is inculcated in the foregoing part of this effay, that justice is enforced by natural fanctions of the most effectual kind, by which it becomes a law in the strictest fense, a law which never can be transgreffed with impunity. To extend this law to generofity, and the other fecondary virtues, and to make thefe our duty, would produce an inconfiftency in human nature. It would make univerfal benevolence a strict duty, to which the limited capacity, and more limited abilities, of man, are by no means proportioned. Generofity, therefore, heroifm, and all the extraordinary exertions of virtue, must be left to our own choice, without

without adjecting any punishment to the forbearance. Day-light now begins to break in upon us. If the fecondary virtues must not be enforced by punifiment, it becomes necessary that they be encouraged by reward; for without fuch encouragement, examples would be rare of facrificing one's own interest to that of others. And after confidering the matter with the utmost coolnefs and deliberation, I cannot, for my part, imagine any reward more proper than that actually bestowed, which is to place these virtues in the highest rank, to give them a superior dignity, and to make them productive of grand and lofty emotions. To place the primary virtues in the higheft rank, would no doubt be a ftrong support to them. But as this could not be done without displacing the secondary virtues, detruding them into a lower rank, and confequently depriving them of their reward, the alteration would be ruinous to fociety. It would indeed more effectually prevent injustice and wrongs of every fort. But would it not as effectually prevent the exercise of benevolence. and the numberless benefits which we inceffantly draw from each other in a focial flate? If it would put an end to our fears, fo it would equally to our hopes; and, to fay all in one word, we would, in the midst of fociety, become folitary beings ; worfe, if poffible, than being folitary in a defert. Justice at the same time is not left altogether destitute of reward. Though it reaches E 2

54 LAW OF NATURE

reaches not the fplendor of the more exalted virtues, it gains at leaft our efteem and approbation; and, which is still of greater importance, it never fails to advance the happines of those who obey its dictates, by the mental fatisfaction it bestows.

### СНАР.

#### CHAP. V.

### Of the PRINCIPLES of ACTION.

IN the three chapters immediately foregoing, we have taken fome pains to inquire into the moral fenfe, and to analyze it into its different parts. Our prefent tafk must be to inquire into those principles in our nature which move us to action. These must be diffinguished from the moral fenfe; which, properly speaking, is not a principle of action. Its province, as shall forthwith be explained, is to instruct us, which of our principles of action we may indulge, and which of them we muss regulating our appetites and passions, and showing us what are lawful, what unlawful.

In a treatile upon the law of nature, it is of great importance to trace out the principles by which we are incited to action. It is above obferved, that the laws of nature can be no other than rules of action adapted to our nature. Now, our nature, fo far as concerns action, is made up of appetites and paffions, which move us to action, and of the moral fenfe, by which these appetites and paffions are governed. The moral fense, of itself, is in no case intended to be the first mover : but it is an excellent fecond. 56

cond, by the most authoritative of all motives. that of duty. Nature is not fo rigid to us her favourite children, as to leave our conduct upon the motive of duty folely. A more mafterly and kindly hand is visible in the architecture of We are impelled to motion by the very man. conftitution of our nature; and to prevent our being carried too far, or in a wrong direction, confcience is fet as at the helm. That fuch is our nature, may be made evident from induction. Were confeience alone, in any cafe, to be the fole principle of action, it might be expected in matters of justice, of which we have the strongest fense, as our indispensable duty. We find this however no exception from the general plan. For is not love of justice a principle of action common to all men? This principle gives the first impulse, which is finely seconded by the influence and authority of confcience. It may fafely therefore be pronounced, that no action is a duty, to the performance of which we are not prompted by fome natural motive or principle. To make such an action our duty, would be to lay down a rule of conduct contrary to our nature, or that has no foundation in our nature. Actions to which we are incited by a natural principle, are fome of them authorifed, others condemned by confcience; but confcience, or the moral fenfe, is not, in any cafe, the fole principle or motive of action. Nature has affigned it a different province. This is a

a truth which has been little attended to by those who have given us fystems of natural laws. No wonder they have gone aftray. Let this truth be kept clofe in view, and it will put an end to many a controverly about these laws. If, for example, it be laid down as a primary law of nature. That we are firicily bound to advance the good of all, regarding our own intereft no farther than as it makes a part of the general happines, we may fafely reject fuch a law, as inconfiftent with our nature; unlefs it be made appear, that there is a principle of benevolence in man which prompts him to an equal purfuit of the happinefs of all. To found this difinterested scheme wholly upon the moral fenfe, would be a vain attempt. The moral fense, as above observed, is our guide only, not our mover. Approbation or difapprobation of these actions, to which, by fome natural principle, we are antecedently directed, is all that can refult from it. If it be laid down, on the other hand, That we ought to regard ourfelves only in all our actions; and that it is folly, if not vice, to concern ourfelves for others; fuch a law can never be admitted, unlefs upon the fuppolition that felf-love is our only principle of action.

It is probable, that, in the following particular, man differs from the brute creation. Brutes are entirely governed by principles of action, which, in them, obtain the name of inflinctsffincts. They blindly follow their inftincts, and are led by that inflinct which is ftrongeft for the time. It is meet and fit they should act after this manner. because it is acting according to the whole of their nature. But for man to fuffer himfelf to be led implicitly by inflinct, or his principles of action, without check or control, is not acting according to the whole of his nature. He is endued with a moral fense, or conscience, to check and control his principles of action, and to inftruct him which of them he may indulge, and which of them he ought top reftrain. This account of the brute creation is undoubtedly true in the main : whether fo in every particular, is of no importance to the prefent subject, being suggested by way of contrast only, to illustrate the peculiar nature of man.

A FULL account of our principles of action would be an endlefs theme. But as it is propofed to confine the prefent fhort effay to the laws which govern focial life, we fhall have no occafion to inquire into any principles of action, but what are directed upon others; dropping thofe which have felf alone for their object. And, in this inquiry, we fet out with the following queftion, In what fenfe are we to hold a principle of univerfal benevolence, as belonging to human nature ? This queftion is of importance in the feience of morals : for, as obferved above, univerfal benevolence cannot be a duty, if if we be not antecedently prompted to it by a natural principle. When we confider a fingle man, abstracted from all circumstances and all connections, we are not confcious of any benevolence to him; we feel nothing within us that prompts us to advance his happiness. If one be agreeable at first fight, and attract any degree of affection, it is owing to looks, manners, or behaviour. And for evidence of this, we are as apt to be difgusted at first fight, as to be pleased. Man is by nature a fhy and timorous animal. Every new object gives an impression of fear, till, upon better acquaintance, it is discovered to be harmles. Thus an infant clings to its nurse, upon the fight of a new face; and this natural dread is not removed but by long experience. If every human creature did produce affection in every other at first fight, children, by natural instinct, would be fond of strangers. But no fuch inflinct discovers itself. The fondness of a child is confined to the nurfe, the parents, and those who are most about it; till, by degree's, it open to a fense of other connections. This argument may be illustrated by a low, but apt in-Dogs have, by nature, an affection for ftance. the human species; and upon this account, puppies run to the first man they fee, show marks of fondness, and play about his feet. There is no fuch general fondness of man to man by nature. Certain circumstances are always required to produce and call it forth. Diffrefs indeed never

ver fails to beget fympathy. The mifery of the most unknown gives us pain, and we are prompted by nature to afford relief. But when there is nothing to call forth our fympathy; where there are no peculiar circumstances to interest us, or beget a connection, we rest in a state of indifference, and are not confcious of wishing either good or ill to the perfon. Those moralists, therefore, who require us to lay asside all partial affection, and to act upon a principle of equal benevolence to all men, require us to act upon a principle, which, in truth, has no place in our nature.

In the manner now mentioned, a principle of universal benevolence does certainly not exist in man. Let us next inquire if it exist in any other manner. The happiness of mankind is an object agreeable to the mind in contemplation; and good men have a fenfible pleafure in every fludy or pursuit by which they can promote it. It must indeed be acknowledged, that benevolence is not equally directed to all men, but gradually decreaseth, according to the diffance of the object, till it dwindle away to nothing. But here comes in a happy contrivance of nature, to fupply the want of benevolence towards diftant , objects ; which is, to give power to an abstract term, fuch as, our religion, our country, our government, or even mankind, to raife benevolence or public spirit in the mind. T' e particular

### LAW OF NATURE.

lar objects under each of these classes, confidered fingly and apart, may have little or no force to produce affection; but when comprehended under one general view, they become an object that dilates and warms the heart. In this manner, a man is enabled to embrace in his affection all mankind : and, in this sense, man, without question, is endued with a principle of universal benevolence.

THAT man must have a great share of indifference in his temper, who can reflect upon this branch of human nature without some degree of emotion. There is perhaps not one scene to be met with, in the natural or moral world, where more of defign, and of confummate wildom, are displayed, than in this under confideration. The authors, who, impressed with reverence for human nature, have endeavoured to exalt it to the highest pitch, could none of them stretch their imagination beyond a principle of equal benevolence to every individual. And a very fine scheme it is in idea. But, unluckily, it is entirely of the Utopian kind, altogether unfit for life and action. It hath escaped the confideration of these authors, that man is by nature of a limited capacity, and that his affection, by multiplication of objects, instead of being increased, is fplit into parts, and weakened by division. A principle of universal equal benevolence, by dividing the attention and affection, instead of pro-F moting

бt

62

moting benevolent actions, would in reality be an obstruction to them. The mind would be distracted by the multiplicity of objects that have an equal influence, fo as to be eternally at a lofs where to begin. But the human fystem is better. adjusted, than to admit of such disproportion betwixt ability and affection. The chief objects of a man's love are his friends and relations. He referves fome share to bestow on his neighbours. His affection lessens gradually, in proportion to the diftance of the object, till it vanish altogether. But were this the whole of human nature, with regard to benevolence, man would be but an abject creature. By a very happy contrivance, objects which, because of their distance, have little or no influence, are made by accumulation, and by being gathered together in one general view, to have the very ftrongeft effect : exceeding, in many inflances, the most lively affection that is bestowed upon a particular object. By this happy contrivance, the attention of the mind, and its affections, are preferved entire, to be bestowed upon general objects, instead of being diffipated among an endless number of individuals. Nothing more ennobles human nature than this principle or fpring of action; and at the fame time, nothing is more wonderful, than that a general term, to which a very faint, if any idea, is affixed, should be the foundation of a more intense affection than is beflowed, for the most part, upon particular objects,

objects, how attractive foever. When we talk of our country, our religion, our government, the ideas annexed to these general terms are, at best, obscure and indistinct General terms are extremely useful in language; ferving, like mathematical figns, to communicate our thoughts in a fummary way. But the use of them is not confined to language. They ferve for a much nobler purpose; to excite us to generous and benevolent actions, of the most exalted kind; not confined to individuals, but grafping whole focieties, towns, countries, kingdoms, nay all mankind. By this curious mechanism, the defect of our nature is amply remedied. Distant objects, otherways infenfible, are rendered confpicuous. Accumulation makes them great, and greatness brings them near the eye. The affection is preferved, to be bestowed entire, as upon a single object. And, to fay all in one word, this fystem of benevolence, which is really founded in human nature, and not the invention of man, is infinitely better contrived to advance the good and hap. pinels of mankind, than any Utopian fystem that ever has been produced by the warmest imagination.

UPON the opposite fystem, of absolute felfishnefs, there is no occasion to lose a moment. It is evidently chimerical, because it has no foundation in human nature. It is not more certain, that there exists the creature man, than that he  $F_2$  hath hath principles of action directed entirely upon others; fome to do good, and others to do mifchief. Who can doubt of this, when friendship, compassion, gratitude, on the one hand : and. on the other, malice and refentment, are confifidered ? It kath indeed been observed, that we indulge fuch paffions and affections merely for our own gratification. But no perfon can relifh this observation, who is in any measure acquainted with human nature. The focial affections are in fact the fource of the deepest afflictions, as well as of the most exalted pleasures, as has been fully laid open in the foregoing effay. In a word, we are evidently formed by nature for fociety, and for indulging the focial, as well as the felfish passions; and therefore to contend, that we ought to regard ourfelves only, and to be influenced by no principles but what are felfish, is directly to fly in the face of nature, and to lay down a rule of conduct inconfiftent with our nature.

THESE fyftems being laid afide, as deviating from the nature of man, the way lies open to come at what are his true and genuine principles of action. The first thing that nature confults, is the prefervation of her creatures. Hence the love of life is made the strongest of all instincts. Upon the same foundation, pain is in a greater degree the object of aversion, than pleasure is of defire. Pain warns us of what tends to our diffolution,

#### LAW OF NATURE

folution, and thereby is a firong guard to felf-prefervation. Pleafure is often fought after unwarily, and by means dangerous to health and life. Pain comes in as a monitor of our danger ; and nature, confulting our prefervation in the firft place, and our gratification in the fecond only, wifely gives pain more force to draw us back, than it gives pleafure to pufh us forward.

THE fecond principle of action is. felf-love, or defire of our own happinefs and good. This is a ftronger principle than benevolence, or love beftowed upon others; and in that refpect is wifely ordered; becaufe every man has more power, knowledge, and opportunity, to promote his own good than that of others. Thus the good of individuals is principally trufted to their own care. It is agreeable to the limited nature of fuch a creature as man, that it fhould be fo; and, confequently, it is wifely ordered, that every man fhould have the ftrongeft affection for himfelf.

THE foregoing principles having *felf* for their object, come not properly under the prefent undertaking. They are barely mentioned, to illuftrate, by opposition, the following principles, which regard others. Of this fort, the most universal is the love of justice, without which there could be no fociety. Veracity is another principle not lefs universal. Fidelity, a third  $F_3$  principle,

66 LAV

principle, is circumscribed within narrower bounds; for it cannot exist without a peculiar connection betwixt two perfons, to found a reliance on the one fide, which requires on the other a conduct corresponding to the reliance. Gratitude is a fourth principle of action, univerfally acknowledged. And benevolence poffeffes the last place, diversified by its objects, and exerting itself more vigorously or more faintly, in proportion to the diffance of particular objects, and the grandeur of those that are general. This principle of action has one remarkable quality. that it operates with much greater force to relieve those in distress, than to promote positive good. In the cafe of diffrefs, fympathy comes to its aid ; and, in that circumstance, it acquires the name of compassion.

THESE feveral principles of action are ordered with admirable wildom, to promote the general good, in the beft and most effectual manner. We act for the general good, when we act upon these principles, even when it is not our immediate aim. The general good is an object too remote, to be the fole impulsive motive to action. It is better ordered, that, in most instances, individuals should have a limited aim, which they can readily accomplish. To every man is assigned his own task. And if every man do his duty, the general good will be promoted much much more effectually, than if it were the aim in every fingle action.

THE above-mentioned principles of action belong to man as fuch, and conflitute what may be called the common nature of man. Many other principles exert themfelves upon particular objects, in the inftinctive manner, without the intervention of any fort of reasoning or reflection, which also belong to man as fuch ; appetite for food, animal love, &c. Other particular appetites, passions, and affections, such as ambition, avarice, envy, &c. conflitute the peculiar nature of individuals; because these are distributed among individuals in very different degrees. It belongs to the science of ethics, to treat of these particular principles of action. All that needs here be observed of them is, that it is the aim of the general principle of felf-love, to obtain gratification to these particular principles.

Digitized by Google

# CHAP.

### C H A P. VI.

# Of the Source of the LAWS of NATURE, according to fome authors.

HAVING thus at full length explained the nature of man, fo far as concerns the prefent subject, it may not be disagreeable to the reader, to have fome relaxation, before he enter upon the remaining part of the work. We shall fill up this interval, with a view of some opinions about the foundation of the laws of nature, which we cannot help judging to be inaccurate, if not erroneous. The epifode is, at the fame time, firicily connected with the principal fubject ; becaufe truth is always beft illustrated by opposing it to error. That morality depends entirely on the will of God, and that his will creates the only obligation we lie under to be virtuous, is the opinion of feveral writers. This opinion, in one sense, is true; but far from being true in their fenfe who inculcate it. And. true or falfe, it does not advance us a fingle ftep in the knowledge of our duty. For what does it avail, to know, that morality depends upon the will of God, till we once know what his will is? If it be faid, there is an original revelation of it to us in our nature; this can only mean, that our nature itsclf makes us perceive the diftinction

60

tinction betwixt virtue and vice, which is the very doctrine above laid down. But, fay they, God, from the purity and rectitude of his nature, cannot but approve good actions, and disapprove such as are otherways. Here they don't confider, that this argument fuppofes a diftinction betwixt virtue and vice, antecedent to the will of God. For if, abstracting from his will, virtue and vice were indifferent, which is fupposed in the proposition, we have no data from the purity of God's nature, or from any other principle, to conclude, that virtue is more the object of his choice than vice. But, further, the very supposition of the purity and rectitude of the nature of the divine being, presupposes a sense or knowledge in us of an essential difference betwixt virtue and vice. Therefore it can never be faid, in any proper fenfe, that our only obligation to virtue is the will of God; feeing it is true, that, abstracting altogether from his will, there is an obligation to virtue founded in the very frame of our nature.

In one fenfe indeed it is true, that morality depends upon the will of God, who made us fuch as we are, with a moral fenfe to diffinguish virtue from vice. But this is faying no more, but that it is God's will, or that it is agreeable to him, we should be virtuous. It is another thing to maintain, that man is indifferent to virtue and vice, and that he is under no obligation to the one more than to the other, unlefs fo far as he is determined by the arbitrary will of a fuperior or fovereign. That a being may be fo framed as to answer this description, may be yielded. But, taking man as he is, endued with a moral fense, it is a direct contradiction to hold, that he is under no obligation to virtue, other than the mere will of God. In this fense, morality no more depends upon the will of God, than upon our own will.

WE shall next take a view of a doctrine which may be fet in opposition to the foregoing; and that is, Dr Clarke's demonstration of the unalterable obligation of moral duty. His proposition is, " That, from the eternal and neceffary " differences of things, there naturally and ne-" ceffarily arife certain moral obligations, which " are of themselves incumbent on all rational " creatures, antecedent to all politive inftitution, " and to all expectation of reward or punish-" ment." And this proposition he demonstrates in the following manner. " That there is a fit-" nels of certain circumstances to certain per-" fons, and an unfitnefs of others, antecedent " to politive laws; and that, from the different " relations of different things, there arifes a fit-"" nefs and unfitnefs of certain behaviour of " fome perfons. For inftance, God is fuperior " to man, and therefore it is fit that man should " worship him."

Ir

IF this demonstration, as it is called, be the only or chief foundation of morals, unlucky it is, that a doctrine of fuch importance should have so long been hid from mankind. The ancients, however, carried the obligation of morals perhaps as far as this eminent divine does. And now that the important discovery is made, it is not likely to do great fervice; considering how little the bulk of mankind are able to enter into abstruss generally has, after it is apprehended.

BUT abstruseness is not the only imperfection of this celebrated argument. It appears to me altogether inconclusive. Laying aside perception and the moral fenfe, upon which the Doctor founds no part of his demonstration, I should be utterly at a loss, from any given relation betwixt perfons, to draw a conclusion of the fitness or unfitnels of a certain course of behaviour. "God is our fuperior, and therefore it is fit " we should worship him." I put the question, Upon what principle of reason does this conclusion reft? where is the connecting propofition by means of which the inference is drawn? Here the Doctor must be utterly at a loss. For the truth of the matter is, that the terms fitne (s and unfitness, in their present fignification, depend entirely upon the moral fense. Fitnefs and unfitne/s, with regard to a certain end or purpole,

pofe, are qualities of actions which may be gathered from experience. But fitnefs or unfitnels of actions, as importing right or wrong, as denoting what we ought to do, or abstain from, have truly no meaning, unlefs upon fuppofition of a moral fense, which this learned divine never once dreams of taking into his argument. The Doctor's error therefore is a common one. that he endeavours to substitute reason in place of fentiment. The fitnels of worshipping our Creator was obvious to him, as it is to every man, because it is founded in our very nature. It is equally obvious with the preference of honefty to dishonesty. His only mistake is, that, overlooking the law written in his own heart, he vainly imagines that his metaphylical argument is juft, because the consequence he draws from it happens to be true. And to fatisfy even his most devoted disciples, that this is the case, let us only fuppose, that man, by nature, had no approbatory or disapprobatory sense of actions; it could never be evinced, by any abstract argument whatever. that the worship of the Deity is his duty, or, in the moral fense of fitness, that it is more fit for him to be honeft than to be diffioneft.

AND, upon this head, we will take the liberty to add, becaufe it is of importance to the fubject in general, that, fuppofing our duty could be made plain to us, by an abftract chain of reafoning, yet we have good ground to conclude, from analogy,

હ

analogy, that the author of nature has not left our actions to be directed by fo weak a principle as reason : and a weak principle it must be to the bulk of mankind, who have little capacity to enter into abstract reasoning ; whatever effect it may have upon the learned and contemplative. Nature has dealt more kindly by us. We are compelled by cogent principles, to perform all the different dutics of life. Self-prefervation is not left to the conduct of reason, but is guarded by the strongest instinct, which makes us carefully, or rather mechanically, avoid every appearance of danger. The propagation of the fpecies is enforced by the most importunate of all appetites; and the care of our offspring, by a lively and conftant affection. Is nature fo deficient, as to leave the duty we owe our neighbour, which flands in the first rank of duties, to be directed by cool reafoning? This is not according to the analogy of nature : nor is it fact ; witnefs compassion, friendship, benevolence, and all the tribe of the focial affections. Neither is common justice left upon this footing, the most useful, though not the most exalted virtue. We are compelled to it by a principle common to all men, and it is attended with a fevere fense of disapprobation, and of merited punishment.

A LATE author \*, whom I fhall just mention

\* Wollafton.

G

Digitized by Google

73

by the way, gives a whimfical fystem of morals. He endeavours to reduce all crimes to that of telling a lie; and, because telling a lie is immoral, he concludes, that the feveral crimes he mentions are immoral. Robbery, for example, is acting or telling a lie; because it is in effect faying, that the goods I feize are mine. Adultery is acting or telling a lie, because it is in effect maintaining, that my neighbour's wife is not his, but mine. But not to infift upon the abfurdity of giving all crimes the fame character, and confounding their nature, it appears evident, that, in this argument, the very thing is taken for granted which is to be proved. For why is it a virtual lie to rob one of his goods? Is it not by imposing upon mankind, who must prefume those goods to be mine, which I take as my own? But does not this evidently prefup. pose a difference betwixt mcum and tuum, and that I ought not to make free with another's property without his confent? For what other reason are the goods prefumed to be mine, but that it is unlawful to meddle with what belongs to another? The fame observation will apply to all his other transmutations; for, in acting or telling the lic, it is conftantly taken for granted, that the action is wrong in itself. And this very wrong is the circumstance which, by the author's suppolition, imposes upon the spectators. The error therefore of this author is of the fame nature with Dr Clarke's, in his fystem above examined.

mined. It is an evident begging of the queftion : the very thing is taken for granted which is undertaken to be proved. With regard to the prefent fubject, we have no occasion further to obferve of this curious author, that when he draws fo ftrong confequences from telling a lie, it was incumbent upon him to fet in the clearest light the immorality of that action. But this he does not fo much as attempt, leaving it upon the conviction of one's own mind. This indeed he might fafely do; but not more fafely than to leave upon the fame conviction all the other crimes he treats of.

G 2

CHAP.

75

### C H A P. VII.

#### Of JUSTICE and INJUSTICE.

**TUSTICE** is that moral virtue which guards property, and gives authority to covenants. And as it is made out above, that justice, being essentially necessary to the maintenance of fociety, is one of those primary virtues which are enforced by the ftrongeft natural laws, it would be unneceffary to fay more upon the fubject, were it not for a doctrine espoused by the author of a treatife upon human nature, that justice, fo far from being one of the primary virtues, is not even a natural virtue, but established in society by a fort of tacit convention, founded upon a notion of public intereft. The figure which this author defervedly makes in the learned world, is too confiderable, to admit of his being paffed over in filence. And as it is of great importance to creatures who live in fociety, to be made fenfible upon how firm a basis justice is erected, a chapter expressly upon that fubject may perhaps. not be unacceptable to the reader.

OUR author's doctrine, fo far as it concerns that branch of juffice by which property is fecured, comes to this: That, in a flate of nature, there can be no fuch thing as property; and that the idea of property arifes, after juffice is eftablished

76

### LAW OF NATURE

77

eftablished by convention, whereby every one is fecured in his possession. In opposition to this fingular doctrine, there is no difficulty to make out, that we have an idea of property, antecedent to any fort of agreement or convention; that property is founded on a natural principle; and that violation of property is attended with remorfe, and a fense of breach of duty. In profecuting this subject, it will appear how admirably the springs of human nature are adapted one to another, and to external circumstances.

THE furface of this globe, which fcarce yields spontaneously food for the wildest favages, is by labour and industry made fo fruitful, as to fupply man, not only with necessaries, but even with materials for luxury. Man originally made fhift to fupport himfelf, partly by prey, and partly by the natural fruits of the earth. In this flate he in fome measure refembled beasts of prey, who devour instantly what they feize, and whose care is at an end when the belly is full. But man was not defigned by nature to be an animal of prey. A tenor of life where food is fo precarious, requires a conflitution that can bear long fafting and immoderate eating, as occasion offers. Man is of a different make. He requires regular and frequent supplies of food, which could not be obtained in his original occupations of fishing and hunting. He found it necessary therefore to abandon this manner of life, and to G<sub>3</sub> hecome

become shepherd. The wild creatures, such of them as are gentle and proper for food, were brought under subjection. Hence herds of cattle. sheep, goats, &c. ready at hand for the fustenance of man. This contrivance was fucceeded by another. A bit of land is divided from the common; it is cultivated with the fpade or plough; grain is fown, and the product is flored for the use of a family. Reason and reflection prompted thefe improvements, which are effential to our well-being, and in a good measure neceffary even for bare existence. But a matter which concerns felf-prefervation, is of too great moment to be left entirely to the conduct of reafon. This would not be according to the analogy of nature. To fecure against neglect or indolence, man is provided with a principle that operates inflinctively without reflection; and that is the hoarding difpetition, common to him with feveral other animals. No author. I fuppofe, will be fo bold as to deny this difposition to be natural and univerfal. It would be shamelefs to deny it, confidering how folicitous every man is after a competency, and how anxious the plurality are to fwell that competency beyond all bounds. The hoarding appetite, while moderate, is not graced with a proper name. When it exceeds just bounds, it is known by the name of avarice.

THE compass I have taken is large, but the shortest road is not always the smoothest or most patent.

79

. . . <del>. . .</del> .

patent. I come now to the point, by putting a plain question, What fort of creature would man be, endued as he is with a hoarding principle, but with no fense or notion of property? He hath a constant propensity to hoard for his own use : confcious at the fame time that his flores are not lefs free to others than to himfelf ;---racked thus perpetually betwixt the defire of appropriation, and confciousness of its being scarce practicable. I fay more ; the hoarding principle is an inftinct obvioufly calculated for affifting reason, in moving us to provide against want. This inftinct, like all others in the human foul, ought to be a cause adequate to the effect which is intended to be accomplished by it. But this it cannot be, independent of a sense of property. For what effectual provision can be made against want, when the ftores of every individual are, without any check from confcience, left free to the depredations of the whole species ? Here would be a palpable defect or inconfistency in the nature of man. If I could suppose this to be his cafe, I should believe him to be a creature made in haste, and left unfinished. I am certain there is no fuch inconfistency to be found in any other branch of human nature; nor indeed, fo far as we can discover, in any other creature that is endued with the hoarding principle. Every bee inhabits its own cell, and feeds on its own honey. Every crow has its own neft; and punishment is always applied, when a fingle stick happens

happens to be pilfered. But we find no fuch inconfiftency in man. The cattle tamed by an individual, and the field cultivated by him, were held univerfally to be his own from the beginning. A relation is formed betwixt every man and the fruits of his own labour, the very thing we call property, which he himfelf is fenfible of, and of which every other is equally fenfible. *Yours* and *mine* are terms in all languages, familiar among favages, and underftood even by children. This is a matter of fact, which every human creature can teffify.

THIS reafoning may be illustrated by many apt analogies. I shall mention one in particular. Veracity, and a disposition to believe what is affirmed for truth, are corresponding principles, which make one entire branch of the human nature. Veracity would be of no use were men not difpcfed to believe; and, abstracting from veracity, a disposition to believe, would be a dangerous quality; for it would lay us open to fraud and deceit. There is precifely the fame correspondence betwixt the hoarding principle and the fenfe of property. The latter is ufelefs without the former; witrefs animals of prey, who having no occasion for property, have no notion of it. The former again, without the latter, is altogether infufficient to produce the effect for which it is intended by nature.

Thus

THUS it appears clear, that the fense of property does not owe its existence to fociety. But in a matter of fo great importance in the fcience of morals. I cannot reft fatisfied with a fuccefsful defence. I aim at a complete victory, by infifting on a proposition directly opposite to that of my antagonist, viz. That fociety owes its existence to the fense of property; or at least, that without this fense no fociety ever could have been formed. In the proof of this propolition, we have already made a confiderable progrefs, by evincing, that man by his nature is a hoarding animal, and loves to ftore for his own use. In order to the conclusion, we have but one farther step to make; which is, to confider what originally would have been the flate of man, supposing him destitute of the sense of property. The answer is extremely obvious, That it would have been a state of universal war ;- of men preying upon each other ;- of robbing and pilfering the neceffaries of life, where-ever found, without regard to industry, or the connection that is formed betwixt an individual and the fruits of his own labour. Courage and bodily ftrength would have flood in place of right, and nothing left for the weak, but to hide themselves and their goods, under ground, or in inaccessible places. And to do Hobbes justice, who, as well as our author, denies the fense of property to be natural, he fairly owns this reasoning to be just, and boldly afferts, that the state of nature is a state of war,

war, all against all. In a word, defitute of the fense of property, men would naturally be enemies to each other, not lefs than they are to wolves and foxes at present. Now, if this must have been the original condition of man, let our author fay, by what over-ruling power, by what miracle, individuals fo difpofed ever came to unite in fociety. We may pronounce with great affurance, that fo fignal a revolution in the state of man could never have been compassed by natural means. Nothing can be more evident. than that relying upon the fense of property, and the prevalence of justice, a few individuals ventured at first to unite for mutual defence and mutual fupport; and finding the manifold comforts of fuch a state, that they afterwards gradually united into larger and larger focieties.

IT mush not be overlooked, that the fense of property is fortified by another principle. Every man has a peculiar affection for what he calls his own. He applies his skill and industry with great alacrity to improve his own subject: his affection to it grows with the time of his posses of the puts a much greater value upon it, than upon any subject of the same kind that belongs to another.

BUT this is not all that is involved in the fenfe of property. We not only fuffer pain in having our goods taken from us by force; for that would

## LAW OF NATURE.

would happen were they deftroyed or loft by accident. We have the fenfe of wrong and injuflice. The perfon who robs us has the fame fenfe, and every mortal who beholds the action, confiders it as vitious, and contrary to right.

JUDGING it not altogether fufficient to have overturned the foundation of our author's doctrine, we proceed to make fome obfervations upon it, in order to flow how ill it hangs together.

AND, in the first place, he appears to reason not altogether confistently in making out his fyftem. He founds justice on a general fense of common interest \*. And yet, at no greater diftance than a few pages, he endeavours to make out +, and does it fuccessfully, that public interest is a motive too remote and too sublime to affect the generality of mankind, and to operate, with any force, in actions so contrary to private interest, as are frequently those of justice and common honesty.

In the fecond place, abstracting from the fenfe of property, it does not appear, that a fenfe of common interest would necessfarily lead to such a regulation, as that every man should have the undisturbed enjoyment of what he hath acquired by his industry or good fortune. Supposing

Digitized by Google

\* Vol. 3. p. 59. + Vol. 3. p. 43.

no

83

no fense of property, 1 do not see it inconfistent with fociety, to have a Lacedemonian conftitution, that every man may lawfully take what by addrefs he can make himfelf master of, without force or violence. The depriving us of that to which we have no right, would be doing little more than drinking in our brook, or breathing in our air. At any rate, fuch a refined regulation would never be confidered of importance enough, to be established upon the very commencement of fociety. It must come late, if at all, and be the effect of long experience, and great refinement in the art of living. It is very true, that, abstaining from the goods of others, is a regulation, without which fociety cannot well fubfift. But the necessity of this regulation arifeth from the fense of property, without which a man would fuffer little pain in lofing his goods, and would have no notion of wrong or injustice. There appears not any way to evade the force of this reafoning, other than peremptorily to deny the reality of the fenfe of property. Others may, but our author, after all, cannot with a good grace do it. An appeal may be fafely made to his own authority. For is it not evidently this fenfe, which hath fuggested to him the necessity, in the inflitution of every fociety, to fecure individuals in their possefions? He cannot but be fensible, that, abstracting from the affection for property, the necessity would be just nothing at all. But our perceptions operate calmly

calmly and filently; and there is nothing more common, than to firain for far-fetched arguments in fupport of conclusions which are fuggefted by the fimpleft and most obvious perceptions.

A THIRD obfervation is, that fince our author refolves all virtue into fympathy, why fhould he with-hold the fame principle from being the foundation of juffice ? Why fhould not fympathy give us a painful fenfation, in depriving our neighbour of the goods he has acquired by induftry, as well as in depriving him of his life or limb? For it is a fact too evident to be denied, that many men are more uneafy at the lofs of their goods, than at the lofs of a member.

AND, in the last place, were justice founded on a general sense of common interest only, it behoved to be the weakest sense in human nature; especially where injustice is committed against a stranger, with whom we are not in any manner connected. Now, this is contrary to all experience. The sense of injustice is one of the strangest that belongs to humanity, and is also of a peculiar nature. It involves a sense of duty which is transgression. Had our author but once reflected upon these peculiarities, he never could have been satisfied with the stight founda-.

Н

Digitized by Google

tion

## 86 LAW OF NATURE.

tion he gives to justice; for these peculiarities are altogether unaccountable upon his system.

I SHALL close this reasoning with one reflection in general upon the whole. The fubject in difpute is a ftrong inftance how dangerous it is to erect schemes, and assert propositions, without relation to facts and experiments ; - not lefs dangerous in morals than in natural philofo-Had our author examined human nature, phy. and patiently fubmitted to the method of induction, by making a complete collection of facts, before venturing upon general propositions; I am politive he would have been as far as any man from maintaining, that justice is an artificial virtue, and that property is the child of fociety. Discovering this edifice of his to be a mere caffle in the air, without the flightest foundation, he would have abandoned it without any reluctance.

THAT branch of jufice which regards promifes and covenants, hath alfo a folid foundation in human nature; notwithftanding what is laid down by our author in two diffinct propofitions \*, " That a promife would not be intelli-" gible, before human conventions had eftablifh-" cd it; and, That, even if it were intelligible, " it would not be attended with any moral ob-" ligation." As man is framed for fociety, mutual truft and confidence, without which there can be no fociety, enter into the character of the

• p. 102.

human

Digitized by Google

human species. Corresponding to these, are the principles of veracity and fidelity. Veracity and fidelity would be of no fignificancy, were men not disposed to have faith, and to rely upon what is faid to them, whether in the way of evidence or engagement. Faith and truft, on the other hand, would be very hurtful principles, were mankind void of veracity and fidelity. For, upon that fuppolition, the world, as observed above. would be over-run with fraud and deceit. Tŕ that branch of justice which restrains us from harming each other, be effential to the very existence of society, fidelity and veracity are not lefs effential to its well-being : for from them foring mostly the advantages that are peculiar to the focial life. It is justly observed by our author, that man in a folitary state is the most helpless of beings; and that by fociety only he is enabled to fupply his defects, and to acquire a fuperiority over his fellow-creatures ; that, by conjunction of forces, our power is augmented; by partition of employments, we work to better purpole; and, by mutual fuccour, we acquire fecurity. But, without mutual fidelity and truft, we could enjoy none of these advantages ; without them, we could not have any comfortable intercourfe with each other. Hence it is, that treachery is the vilest of crimes, and what mankind have ever held in the utmost abhorrence. It is worfe than murder, becaufe it forms a character, and is directed against all mankind; where-

as

### 88 · LAW OF NATURE.

as murder is but a transitory act, directed against a fingle person. Infidelity is of the fame species with treachery. The effence of both crimes is the fame, to wit, breach of truft. Treachery has only this aggravating circumflance, that it turns the confidence reposed in me against the filend who trufts me. Now, breach of promife is a fpecies of infidelity; and therefore our author has but a fingle choice. He must either maintain, that treachery is no crime, or that breach of promise is a crime. And, in fact, that it is fo, every man must bear evidence to him. felf. The performance of a deliberate promife has, in all ages, been confidered as a duty. We have that fense of a promile, as what we are bound to perform by a firict obligation; and the breach of promife is attended with the fame natural flings which attend other crimes, fciz. remorfe, and a fense of merited punishment.

It is evident from what is now faid, that it is but an imperfect conception of a promife, to confider it, as our author does \*, with relation only to the perfon who makes the promife. In this act two perfons are concerned; the perfon who makes the promife, and the perfon to whom the promife is made. Were there by nature no truft nor reliance upon promifes, breach of promife would be a matter of indifferency. There-

Digitized by Google

• Vol. 3. p. 102.

fore

### LAW OF NATURE.

fore the effence of a promife confifts in keeping faith. The reliance upon us, produced by our own act, conflitutes the obligation. We feel ourfelves bound to perform; we confider it as our duty. And when we violate our engagement, we have a fenfe of moral turpitude in difappointing the perfon who relied upon our faith.

WE shall close this subject, concerning the foundation of juffice, with a general reflection. Running over every branch of our duty, what concerns ourfelves as well as our neighbours, we find, that nature has been more provident, than to trust us entirely to the guidance of cool reafon. It is observed above, that our duty is enforced by inflinct and appetite, as well as it is directed by reafon. Now, if man be a focial being, and justice effential to fociety, it is not according to the analogy of nature, that we should be left to investigate this branch of our duty by a chain of reafoning ; especially where the reasoning, according to our author's doctrine, turns upon fo remote an object as public good. May we not apply to justice, what is fo beautifully reasoned concerning fociety, in a dialogue upon happiness \*, " If fociety be thus-" agreeable to our nature, is there nothing with-" in us to excite and lead us to it ? no impulfe; " no preparation of faculties ? It would be

🕈 p. 155-

Digitized by Google

" ftrange

80

90

" ftrange if there should not." If we be fitted by our nature for fociety; if pity, benevolence, friendship, love, the general dislike of solitude, and defire of company, be natural affections, all of them conducive to fociety, it would be strange if there should be no natural affection, no preparation of faculties, to direct us to do justice, which is fo effential to fociety. But nature has-not failed us here, more than in the other parts of our conflitution. We have a fense of property; we have a sense of obligation to perform our engagements; and we have a fenfe of wrong in incroaching upon property, and in being untrue to our engagements. Society could not fublist without these affections, more than it could fubfift without the focial affections, properly fo called. We have reafon. a priori, to conclude equally in favour of both; and we find, upon examination, that our conclusion is just.

Digitized by Google

CHAP.

### CHAP. VIII.

#### Of the PRIMARY LAWS of NATURE.

WE are now arrived at what is chiefly the purpole of the prefent effay; and that is, to give a flight sketch, or curfory view, of the primary laws of nature, deduced from human nature, their true fource. This talk I undertake. as a specimen merely of that fort of reasoning which belongs to the fubject; for a complete treatife is far beyond my reach. Action ought to be the end and aim of all our inquiries; without which, moral, as well as metaphyfical reafonings, are but empty speculation. And as life and manners are more peculiarly the object of the moral science, the weight and importance of the fubject, one would imagine, must have brought authors to one way of thinking. But it is lamentable to find the world divided about these primary laws, almost as much as they commonly are about the most airy and abstract points. Some authors acknowledge no principle in man, and confequently no duty, but what is altogether felfish ; and it is curious to observe how they wreft and torture every focial principle to give it the appearance of felfishness. Others exalt human nature much above its just standard, give no guarter to felfishnels, but consider man 29

91

92 LAW OF NATURE.

as bound to direct every action to the good of the whole, and not to prefer his own interest to that of others. The celebrated Lord Shafteibury goes fo far, as not to admit of any thing like partial benevolence; holding, that if it be not entire, and directed to the whole species, it is not benevolence at all. It is not difficult to affign a cause for such difference in opinion; though it may appear ftrange, that authors fhould differ fo widely about the nature of man, which every man ought to be acquainted with. There is nothing more common in philosophy, as well as in action, than to build caftles in the air. Impatient of the flow and cold method of induction. we fly to fystems, which every writer takes the liberty of framing, according to his own tafte and fancy. Fond of the fabric which he himfelf hath erected, it is far from his thoughts to fubject it to examination, by trying whether it will fland the teft of flubborn facts. Men of narrow minds, and contracted principles, naturally fall in with the felfish fystem. The fystem of universal benevolence attracts the generous and warm-hearted. In the midft of various and opposite opinions, the purpose of this effay is, by the patient method of induction, to fearch for truth ; and, after what is above laid down, it will not be difficult to find it.

LET us only recapitulate, that the principles of action impel to action, and that the moral fenfe fense is given as an instructor to regulate our actions, to enforce one principle, to restrain another, and to prefer one to another when they are in opposition. Hence the laws of nature may be defined to be, Rules of our conduct and behaviour, founded on natural principles, approved by the moral fense, and enforced by natural rewards and punishments.

In fearching for these laws, it must be obvious, from what is above faid, that, by the moral fense, a difference is clearly established among our principles of action. Some are enforced by the consciousness of duty; some are left in a measure upon our own choice. With respect to the former, we have no liberty, but ought to proceed to action: with respect to the latter, we may freely indulge every natural impulse, where the action is not disapproved by the moral fense. From this short sketch may be readily deduced all the laws of nature which govern human actions; though, in the present essays the duty which a man owes to himself, where others are not concerned, is not comprehended.

OF the principles of action which are enforced by the confciousness of duty, the principle of justice takes the lead. It consists of two branches, one to abstain from harming others, and one to perform our positive engagements. With respect to both of them no choice is admitted. We are bound

bound to perform every act of juffice as our indispensable duty. Veracity, fidelity, and gratitude, are principles of action which come under the fame class. And with respect to the whole, it ought not to be overlooked, that the internal conftitution of man is adjusted with admirable wifdom to his external circumftances as a focial being. Were we allowed to prey upon one another like favage animals, there could be no fociety : and were there nothing in our nature that could bind us to instruct, to comfort, to benefit each other, fociety would be deprived of all its advantages, and man, in the midft of fociety, would be a folitary being. Benevolence is another principle of action, which, in many circumstances, by means of peculiar connections. becomes also an indifpensable duty. Witness the connection of parent and child. We are obliged to provide for our children ; it is strict duty, and the neglect of it caufes remorfe. In the cafe of other blood-relations, an only brother, for example, who depends entirely on our help, we feel fomewhat of the fame kind of obligation, though in a weaker degree ; and thus, through other connections, it diminisheth by fucceffive gradations, till, at laft, the fenfe of duty is loft in fimple approbation, without any obligatory feeling. This is univerfally the courfe which nature holds. Her transitions are foft and gentle. She makes things approximate fo nicely one to another, as to leave no gap or chafm. One

One other instance of a connection which produceth a fense of obligation, shall suffice. In the general cafe, of procuring politive good to others, or advancing happiness, without any connection, fave merely that of humanity, it is felfapprobation, and not strict obligation, that is felt. But let us put the case of a person in di-By this fingle circumstance, though it ftrefs. forms no intimate connection, the moral fense is influenced, and now it becomes a politive duty to exert our benevolence, by affording relief. The neglect of this duty is attended with remorfe and felf-condemnation; though poffibly not of fo ftrong a kind as where we betray our truft, or are the authors of politive milchief to others. Thus charity is, by all mankind, confidered as a duty to which we are firictly bound.

WITH respect to principles of action which are not enforced by the confciousness of duty, these we may restrain at our pleasure, but may not always indulge at our pleasure. For in many circumstances the moral fense interposes, and forbids the gratification. Self-preservation is the strongest of all our principles of action, and the means are infinite which may be put in motion for that end. Yet here the moral fense frequently interposes, and even for the preservation of our lives, gives no indulgence to the transgression of any positive duty. Self-preservation, however it may alleviate, will not justify any wrong 06

wrong done to an innocent perfon. It will not inflify treachery, nor any unjust action. And this is another inftance of the admirable correfpondence of the moral fense with the external circumstances of man as a focial being. For it is effential to fociety, that the focial duties should be indifpensable; and it is agreeable to good order, that the interest of an individual should yield to that of the whole. The doctrine thus laid down in general, may, I am fenfible, be liable to milconstruction ; and therefore it must be further explained. Self-prefervation, it is certain, will not justify any immoral action. But then, in the circumstances of imminent danger, feveral actions become lawful, which are unlawful in ordinary circumstances. For example, to prevent dying of hunger, a man may take food at short-hand where-ever he can find it, without confulting the proprietor. Seizing upon what belongs to another, is in ordinary circumftances an unlawful act: but in a cafe which can bear no delay, the act is lawful, becaufe the approbation of the proprietor will be prefumed. At any rate, it is his duty to relieve the diffreffed; and what he ought to give, may justiv be forced from him at short-hand, where the delay of applying to a judge would be fatal. Another example, is the cafe of two men in a shipwreck, laying hold at the same instant of a plank which cannot support both. In this case it becomes lawful to struggle for the fole posseffion.

fion, though one must perish in the struggle : for each has an equal title to act for felf-prefervation; and if both cannot be preferved, mere force is the only method by which the dispute can be determined. Upon this signal authority of the moral sense to restrain the exercise of this class of principles, nothing further is necessfary to be faid, but only that if it possibles this authority over the principle of felf-prefervation, its authority must, if possible, be shill more complete over the weaker principle of felf-love, and others which belong to the same class.

THESE are the outlines of the laws which govern our actions, comprehending what we may do, what we ought to do, and what we ought not to do. The two latter, as matter of duty, are the proper objects of law, natural and municipal. And no more feems to be requifite in this matter, than clearly to point out our duty, by informing us of what we ought to do, and what we ought not to do; feeing actions which come not under the character of duty, may be fafely left to our own choice. With regard then to what may be called our duty, the first and primary law is the law of restraint, by which we are prohibited to hurt others in their perfons, goods, or whatever elfe is dear to them. This is a law which dictates to us what ought not to be done; and fo facred it is, as to yield to none of our principles of action, not even that I

08

that of felf-prefervation. The fecond, which is a law dictating what we ought to do, binds us to the performance of our promifes and covenants. Veracity, defcending in a scale of laws, occupies the next place. This law excludes not fable, nor any liberty of fpeech which tends to amusement. It excludes deceit only, and obliges us in all cafes to adhere to truth where truth is expected from us. Fidelity is a fourth law, not lefs vigorous, though more confined, than veracity ; for, as observed above, fidelity presupposes a peculiar connection betwixt two perfons, to found a reliance on the one fide, and on the other an obligation to fulfil what is justly expected. Gratitude comes next, limited, like fidelity, to particular objects, but more arbitrary as to what it requires of us. Gratitude, without doubt, is firicily our duty; but the measure of performance, and the kind, is left pretty much in our own choice. Benevolence occupies the last place; which, confidered abstractly, is not a politive duty. But there are many connections of different forts, in confequence of which it becomes a duty. For the fake of illustration I shall slightly mention a few. The connection of parent and child is one of the ftrongest, for it makes mutual benevolence an indifpenfable duty. Benevolence among other blood-relations becomes alfo our duty in many particular circumflances, though here it is feldom that we feel ourfelves to firmly bound as we are when engaged

04

ged in the former connection. Many are the connections, fome intimate, fome more flight, which come under the law of equity, and which bind us to the performance of certain acts of benevolence. I shall add but one connection more, *viz.* that which subfiss betwixt us and a perfon in diffres. Benevolence in this case becomes the duty of every one who can afford relief.

THESE feveral laws are admirably adjusted to our nature and circumstances, and tend in the most perfect manner to promote the ends of fociety. In the first place, as man is limited with regard to power and capacity, the foregoing laws are accommodated to his nature, ordering and forbidding nothing but what falls within his compass. In the fecond place, peace and fecurity in fociety are amply provided for, by tying up the hands, as it were, of every perfon from harming others. In the third place, man is prompted in an admirable manner to be useful to others. It is his politive duty to relieve the distressed, and to perform his engagements. Boundless are the good offices which are enforced by veracity, fidelity, and gratitude. We are further incited to do all the good we can, by the pleafure which arifes from being ufeful, and by grateful returns from the perfons obliged. And, lastly, in competition betwixt a man himfelf and others, though his principles of action directed upon himfelf, may be stronger than thofe. I 2

Digitized by Google

those directed upon others, the fuperior rewards bestowed by the confliction of our nature upon the latter, may be deemed a fufficient counterbalance to give an ascendant to the social affections, even such of them as are left to our own choice, and are not enforced by a consciousness of duty.

IT may feem ftrange, that the municipal law of all countries is fo little regardful of the laws of nature, as to adopt but a very few of them. There never was a general law in any country, to punish ingratitude, if it was not among the ancient Persians. There is no positive law to enforce compassion, and to relieve those in diftrefs, if the maintenance of the poor be excepted, which, in fome countries, is provided for by law. No notice is taken of breach of friendship, by statute, nor of the duty we owe our children, further than of fupporting them white they are under age. But municipal laws, being of human invention, are of no great extent. They cannot reach the heart, nor its intentions, further than as expressed by outward acts. And these are to be judged of cautiously, and with referve; becaufe they form a language, dark, and at best full of ambiguities. At the fame time, the object of human laws is man, confidered fingly in the quality of a citizen. When fociety is formed, and government fubmitted to, every private right, inconfiftent with fociety and government,

government, is furrendered. But, in every other respect, individuals reserve their independency and their private rights. Whether a man be virtuous, is not the concern of the fociety, at least not of its laws ; but only whether he tranfgress those regulations, which are necessary to the prefervation of fociety. In this view, great attention is given by the legislature in every country, to enforce the natural law of reftraint from mutual hurt and injury. The like attention is given, to enforce the natural obligation of engagements, and of fidelity, at least fo far as relates to commerce; for infidelity in love and friendship are left to the natural law. Ingratitude is not punished by human laws, because it may be guarded against by positive engagements; nor hard-heartedness with regard to objects of distress; because fociety may subfift without such a law, and mankind are fcarce yet arrived at fuch refinement in manners, as to have an abhorrence of this crime, fufficient to make it an objeft of human punishment.

THERE is another fubftantial reafon, which confines municipal laws within a much narrower compass than the laws of nature. It is effential to municipal laws, that they be clear, plain, and readily applicable to particular cafes; without which judges would be arbitrary, and law made a handle for oppression. For this reason, none of our actions can be the object of positive law, I 3 but

but what are reducible to a precise rule. Ingratitude therefore cannot be the object of municipal laws, becaufe the quality of the crime de-. pends upon a multiplicity of circumstances, which can never be reduced to a precise rule. Duty to our children, friends, and relations, is, with regard to most circumstances, in the fame. cafe. The duty of relieving the diffressed, in like manner, depends upon many circumstances; the nature of the diffrefs, the connection betwixt the parties, the opportunity and ability of affording relief. The abstinence from mutual harm, and the performance of promifes, are capable to be brought under a precise rule, and consequently to be objects of municipal law. The chief. attention of the legislature in all countries, was. at first to explain and enforce the natural law of restraint, without which fociety cannot have a being. Municipal law was afterwards extended. to fupport promifes and covenants, and to enforce performance, without which fociety may exist, but cannot flourish. Gradual improvements in the arts of life, have in later times extended municipal law still farther. The duty of benevolence arifing from certain peculiar connections among individuals, is fusceptible in many cafes of a precife rule. So far benevolence is also taken under the authority of the legitlature, and enforced by rules paffing common-, ly under the name of the law of equity.

## CHAP.

#### CHAP. IX.

#### Of the LAW of NATIONS.

I F we can trust history, the original inhabi-tants of this earth were a brutish and favagerace. And we have little reafon to doubt of the fact, when, even at this day, we find in distant corners the fame fort of people, who have no communication with the reft of mankind. The ftate of nature is accordingly reprefented by moft writers, as a flate of war; nothing going on but rapine and bloodshed. From this picture of the first men, one would be apt to conclude, that man is a wild and rapacious animal, little better than a beaft of prey, till he be moulded by fociety into a rational creature. If this conclusion be just, we cannot help being in some pain for the principles above laid down. Brutifh manners imply brutish principles of action; and, from this view of the original state of mankind, it might feem that moral virtues are not natural, but acquired by means of education and example in a well-regulated fociety; in a word, that the whole moral part of the human fystemis artificial, as justice is represented by a late writer.

BUT to be fatisfied of the fallacy of this conclusion,

193

104 LAW OF NATURE.

clusion, we need only look back to what has already been faid upon the moral fense. If the perception of beauty and deformity in external existences be natural to man, the perception of beauty and deformity, and of a right and wrong. in actions, is equally fo. And indeed, whatever be the influence of education and example, it is an evident truth, that they never can have power to create any one fense or perception. They may well cherish and improve the plants of nature's formation; but they cannot introduce any new or original plant whatever. We must therefore attribute the foregoing appearances to fome other caufe than want of the moral fenfe; and these appearances may easily be explained, from peculiar circumftances, that overbalance the moral fenfe, and produce, in appearance, the fame effects which would refult from a total abfence of that fense. Let us point out these circumftances ; for the fubject is worthy of our ftricteft attention. In the fust place, we must look back to the original state of man, destitute entirely of those arts which produce the conveniencies of life. In this state, man, a most indigent creature, would be incited by felf-prefervation, to fupply his wants the best way he could, without much obstruction from the moral fense. Difputes and differences would multiply, which behoved all to be determined by the ftrong-hand; there being no established rules of conduct to appeal to, nor judges to apply rules to particular cafes.

cafes. In this flate, barbarity, roughnels, and cruelty, formed the character of the human fpecies. For, in the practice and habit of war, the malevolent principles gain flrength and vigour, as the benevolent principles do, by the arts of peace. And to this confideration may be added, that man is by nature fhy and timorous, and confequently cruel when he gets the upper-hand. The fecurity obtained in a regular fociety puts an end, in a great measure, to our fears. Man becomes a magnanimous and generous being, not easily daunted, and therefore not easily provoked to acts of cruelty.

IT may be observed, in the next place, that the rude and illiterate are governed by their appetites and paffions, more than by general principles. We have our first impressions from external objects. It is by education and practice that we acquire a facility in forming complex ideas, and abstract propositions. The ideas of a common interest, of a country, of a people, of a fociety under government, of public good, are complex, and not foon acquired even by the thinking part of mankind. They are fcarce ever acquired by the rude and illiterate; and confequently can fcarce make any impreffion on them. One's own interest, confidered in general, is too complex an object for the bulk of mankind : and therefore it is, that appetites and paffions, aiming at particular objects, are ftronger motives

tives to action with the ignorant and unthinking, than the principle of felf-love, or even of felfprefervation, when it is not excited by fome object which threatens danger. And the fame muft hold more ftrongly with regard to the affections of benevolence, charity, and fuch like, when there is no particular object in view, but only, in general, the good of others.

MAN is a complex machine, composed of various principles of motion, which may be conceived as fo many fprings or weights, counteracting or balancing one another. Thefe being accurately adjusted, the movement of life is beautiful, because regular and uniform. But if fome fprings or weights be withdrawn, those which remain, acting now without opposition from their antagonist forces, will diforder the balance, and derange the whole machine. Remove those principles of action, which being directed upon general and complex objects, are conducted by reflection, and the force of the appetites and paffions, which act by blind impulse, will, of courfe, be doubled. This is precifely the condition of those, who, abandoning the authority of reason, furrender themselves to every appetite. They are tyrannized by paffion, and have no confiftent rule of conduct. It is no caufe of wonder, that the moral fense should not have fufficient authority to command obedience in fuch a cafe. This is the character of favages. We

We have no reason then to conclude, from the foregoing picture, that even the greatest favages are defitute of the moral sense. Their defect rather lies in the weakness of their general principles of action, which are directed upon objects too complex for favages readily to comprehend. This defect is remedied by education and reflection; and then it is, that the moral sense, in concert with these general principles, acquires its full authority, which is openly recognifed, and chearfully submitted to.

THE contemplation is beautiful, when we compare our gradual improvement in knowledge and in morality. We begin with furveying particular objects, and lay in a flock of fimple ideas. Our affections keep pace, being all directed to particular objects; and during this period, we are governed chiefly by our paffions and appetites. So foon as we begin to form complex and general ideas, these also become the objects of our affections. Then it is, that love to our country begins to exert itself, benevolence to our neighbours and acquaintances, affection for our relations as fuch. We acquire by degrees the tafte of public good, and of being ufeful in life. The pleasures of fociety are more and more relished, selfish passions are tamed and fubdued, and focial affections gain the afcendant. We refine upon the pleafures of fociety, becaufe our happiness confists chiefly in social intercourse. We We learn to fubmit our opinions. We affect to give preference to others, and readily accommodate ourfelves to every thing which may render fociety more complete. The malevolent paffions, above all, are brought under the firicteft discipline, if not totally eradicated. Instead of unbounded revenge for the finalless injury, we acquire a degree of felf-denial to overlook trifling wrongs, and in greater wrongs to be fatisfied with moderate reparation.

THE moral fenfe alfo, though rooted in the nature of man, admits of great refinements by culture and education. It improves gradually, like our other powers and faculties, till it comes to be productive of the strongest as well as most delicate feelings. I will endeavour to explain in what manner this happens. Every one muft be fenfible of the great advantages of education and imitation. The most polished nations differ only from favages in refinement of tafte, which being productive of nice and delicate feelings, is the fource of pleafure and pain, more exquisite than favages are susceptible of. Hence it is, that many actions which make little impression upon favages, appear to us elegant and beautiful; as, on the other hand, actions which give them no pain, raife in us averfion and difguft. This may be illustrated by a comparison betwixt the English and French dramatic performances. The English, a rough and hardy people.

Ø

n۰

<u>p</u>-

nt

q.

ad

y,

)k

à.

he

by

y, es

sf:

in

ft

B(

f.

G

le

1,

f.

e

ı£

S

1

people, take delight in reprefentations, which more refined manners render infupportable to their neighbours. The diffreffes, on the other hand, reprefented on the French theatre, are too flight for an Englifh audience. Their paffions are not raifed; they feel no concern. In general, horror, which denotes the higheft degree of pain and averfion that can be raifed by a harfh action, is an emotion feldom felt among fierce and favage nations, where humanity is little regarded. But when the tender affections are improved by fociety, horror is more eafily raifed, and objects which move horror, become more frequent.

THE moral fense not only accompanies our other fenses in their gradual refinement, but receives additional strength upon every occasion from these other fenses. For example, a savage inured to acts of cruelty, feels little pain or aversion in putting an enemy to death in cold blood; and confequently will have no remorfe at fuch an action, other than what proceeds from the moral fense acting by its native strength. But let us suppose a person of so delicate feelings. as scarce to endure a common operation of phlebotomy, and who cannot behold, without fome degree of horror, the amputation of a fractured member; fuch a perfon will be shocked to the higheft degree, if he fee an enemy put to death in cold blood. The grating emotion, thus raifed к

Digitized by Google

109'

fed in him, must communicate itfelf to the feelings of the moral fense, and render them much more acute. And thus, refinement in taste and manners, operating by communication upon the moral fense, occasions a stronger perception of immorality in every vitious action, than what would arise before such refinement. At the fame time, the moral fense improves in its delicacy, as well as the other fenses; whereby a double effect is produced, owing to a double cause. And therefore, upon the whole, the operations of the moral fense in a favage, bear no proportion to its operations in a perfon who stands posfessed of all the advantages of which human nature is fusceptible by refined education.

I NEVER was fatisfied with the defcription given of the law of nations, commonly fo called, That it is a law eftablifhed among nations by common confent, for regulating their conduct with regard to each other. This foundation of the law of nations I take to be chimerical. For upon what occafion was this covenant made, and by whom? If it be faid, that the fenfe of common good gradually brought this law into force; I anfwer, that the fenfe of common good is too complex, and too remote an object, to be a folid foundation for any pofitive law, if it has no other foundation in our nature. But there is no neceffity to recur to fo flender a foundation. What is juft now obferved, will lead us to

a

LAW OF NATURE.

a more rational account of these laws. They are no other but gradual refinements of the original law of nature, accommodating itself to the improved state of mankind. The law of nature, which is the law of our nature, cannot be ftationary. It must vary with the nature of man. and confequently refine gradually as human nature refines. Putting an enemy to death in cold blood, is at prefent looked upon with diffaste and horror, and therefore is immoral; though it was not always fo in the fame degree. It is confidered as barbarous and inhuman, to fight with poisoned weapons, and therefore is more remarkably difapproved by the moral fense than it was originally. Influenced by general objects, we have enmity against France, which is our natural enemy. But this enmity is not directed against individuals; confcious, as we are, that it is the duty of fubjects to ferve their king and country. Therefore we treat prisoners of war with humanity. And now it is creeping in among civilized nations, that, in war, a cartel should be established for exchange of prisoners. The function of an ambassador has ever been held facred. To treat him ill was originally immoral; because it is treating as an enemy the man who comes to us with friendly intentions. But the improved manners of latter times have refined upon the privileges of an ambaffador, and extended them far beyond what they were originally. It is very true, that these refinements K 2 of

III

of the law of nature gain firength and firmnels by cuftom. Hereby they acquire the additional fupport of common confent. For as every nation trufts that thefe laws will be obferved, it is upon that account a breach of faith to tranfgrefs them. But this is not peculiar to thefe particular inflitutions which pafs under the name of the law of nations. There is the fame adventitious foundation for all the laws of nature, which every man trufts will be obferved, and upon that faith directs his conduct.

Digitized by Google

#### ESSAY

# ESSAY III.

### Of LIBERTY and NECESSITY.

 $\mathbf{7}$  HEN we apply our thoughts to the contemplation of final causes, no subject more readily prefents itfelf than the material world, which is stamped with the brightest characters of wifdom and goodnefs. The moral world, being lefs in view, hath been generally overlooked, though it yields not to the other in rich materials. Man's inward fystem, accurately furveyed, will be found not lefs admirable than the external fystem, of which he makes a part. The fubject is the more curious, that the traces of wildom and delign difcernible in our internal frame, lie more out of common fight. They are touches, as it were, of a finer pencil, and of a nicer hand, than are discovered in the material world. Thought is more fubtile than motion; and more of exquisite art is displayed in the laws of voluntary action, than there is place for in adjusting the laws of mere matter.

An extreme beautiful fcene opens to our view, when we confider with what propriety the ideas, feelings, and whole conflictution of the mind of man, correspond to his prefent flate. The imprefions he receives, and the notions he K  $_3$  forms,

forms, are accurately adapted to the uleful purpoles of life, though they correspond not, in every inftance, to the philosophic truth of things. It was not intended that man should make profound difcoveries. He is framed to be more an active than a contemplative being; and his views are so adjusted, as to be made subservient to correctness of action rather than of belief. Several inftances there are of perceptions, which, for want of a more proper term, must be called deceitful or delusive \*; because they differ from the real truth. But man is not thereby in the least misled. On the contrary, the ends of life and action are better provided for by fuch artifice, than if these perceptions were more exact copies of their objects.

In the material world, fomewhat of this kind is generally admitted by modern philofophers. It is found, that the reprefentations of external objects, and their qualities, conveyed by the fenfes, differ fometimes from what philofophy difcovers these objects and their qualities to be. Thus, a furface appears fmooth and uniform, when its roughness is not fuch as to be hurtful.

• I am fonfible that these terms are unhappy, because they are generally taken in a bad sense. Let it only be confidered, that in Latin there is a dolus bonus as well as a dolus malus. By the art of perspective painting, a plain surface appears raised, and an object near the eye appears at a great distance. We are deceived, it is true; but the deceit contributes to our entertainment.

The

The fame furface, examined with a microfcope, is found to be full of ridges and hollows. Were man endued with a microfcopic eye, the bodies that furround him would appear not lefs different from what they do at prefent, than if he were transported into another world. His ideas. upon that fupposition, would indeed be more agreeable to strict truth, but they would be far less ferviceable in common life. It is now univerfally admitted, that the qualities called fecondary, which we by natural inflinct attribute to matter, belong not properly to matter, nor exift really without us. It is a wonderful artifice, to prefent objects to us thus differently diffinguished; to mark them out to the eye in various attires, fo as to be best known and remembered; and to paint on the fancy, gay and lively, grand and striking, or fober and melancholy scenes: whence many of our most agreeable and most affecting emotions arife. Colour, in particular, is a beauty which nature hath fpread upon all her works. Yet all this beauty of colours, with which heaven and earth appear clothed, is a fort of romance or illusion. For among external objects, to which colours are attributed by fenfe. there is really no other diffinction than what arifeth from a difference in the fize and arrangement of the conftituent parts, whereby the rays of light are reflected or refracted in fuch different ways, as to produce in the mind a peculiar perception, which is termed colour. From this, and

and other inftances of the fame kind which might be given, it appears, that our perceptions, fometimes, are lefs accommodated to the truth of things, than to the end for which our fenfes are intended. Nature, at the fame time, hath provided a remedy; for fhe feldom or never leaves us without means of difcovering the deception, and arriving at the truth. And it is wonderful, that even when we act upon thefe deceitful imprefiions, we are not betrayed into any thing that is hurtful. On the contrary, life and action are better provided for, and the ends of our being fulfilled to more advantage, than if we conducted ourfelves by rigid truth.

LET us carry on this fpeculation from the material to the moral world, in order to examine, whether there may not be here alfo analogous inftances of delufive imprefions. This will lead us into an unbeaten track. If, in following this track, the reader fhall flumble upon any object that is altogether new or fingular, let him guard againft furprife, and fufpend a final judgment, till he have leifurely reviewed the whole.

THAT nothing can happen without a caufe, is a principle embraced by all men, the illiterate and ignorant as well as the learned. Nothing that happens is conceived as happening of itfelf, but as an *effect* produced by fome other thing. However ignorant of the caufe, we notwithftanding

ing conclude, that every event must have a cause. We should perhaps be at a loss to deduce this principle from any premisses, by a chain of reafoning. But perception affords conviction, where reason leaves us in the dark. We perceive the proposition to be true. And indeed a sentiment common to all, must be founded on the common nature of all. Curiofity is one of the earliest emotions that are discovered in children: and about nothing are they more curious, than to have causes and reasons given them, why such a thing happened, or how it came about. Hiftorians and politicians make it their chief concern, to trace the causes of actions, the most mysterious not excepted. Be an event ever fo extraordinary, the fense of its being an effect, is not in the least weakened, even with the vulgar; who, rather than affign no caufe, recur to the operation of invisible powers. What is a cause with respect to its proper effect, is considered as an effect with respect to some prior cause, and fo backward, without end. Events thus viewed, in a chain of causes and effects, should naturally be confidered, one would think, as neceffary and fixed: for the relation betwixt a cause and its effect implies fomewhat precife and determinate, and leads our thoughts to what must be, and cannot be otherways than it is.

THAT we have fuch a fense as is above defcribed, cannot be controverted; and yet, when we we fearch farther into human nature, a fense of an opposite kind is discovered, a sense of chance or contingency in events; which is not lefs deeply rooted in our nature than the former. However strange it may appear, that man should be composed of fuch inconfistencies, the fact must notwithstanding be admitted. This senfe of chance or contingency is most conspicuous when we look forward to future events. Some things we indeed always confider as certain or necessary; such as, the revolution of seafons, and the rising and setting of the sun. These, as experience teacheth, are regulated by fixed laws. But many things appear to us loofe, fortuitous, uncertain; uncertain not only with refpect to us, on account of our ignorance of the cause, but uncertain in themselves, or not tied down, and predetermined to fall out, by any invariable law. We naturally make a diffinction betwixt things that must be, and things that may be, or may not be. Thus, with respect to future events, we have a sense of chance, or of contingency, which feems to banish the other fense, of the dependency of events upon precife and determinate caufes.

WHEN we confider in what view our own actions are perceived by the mind, there is fomewhat equally firange and myfterious. It is admitted by all men, that we act from motives. The plain man, as well as the philosopher, perceives ceives the connection betwixt an action and its motive to be fo ftrong, that, from this perception, both of them reason with full confidence about the future actions of others. That an avaritious man will take every fair opportunity of acquiring riches, is as little doubted, as that rain and fun-shine will make plants grow. The motive of gain is judged to operate, as certainly and infallibly, upon his temper, as heat and moifture upon the foil, each to produce its proper effect. If we are uncertain what part any particular man will act, the uncertainty arifeth, not from our doubting whether he will act from a motive; for this is never called in question. It arifeth from our not being able to judge, what the motive is, which, in his prefent circumstances, will prevail. It being then a natural fense, that actions are so connected with their proper motives, as necessarily to arise from the temper, character, and other circumstances of the agent, it should feem, that all the train of human actions would occur to our minds as neceffary and fixed. Yet human actions do not always appear to us in this light. Previous to any particular action, we indeed always judge, that it will be the necessary refult of fome motive. But in a retrospect the judgment seems to vary. Hath a man done what is wrong and fnameful? we accuse, and we condemn him, for acting the wrong and shameful part. We conceive that he had power to act otherways, and

and *ought* to have acted otherways. The whole train of our perceptions, in a moment, accommodate themselves to the supposition of his being a free agent.

THESE are phænomena in human nature of a fingular kind; perceptions which clash with each other; every past event admitted to have a neceffary caufe, and yet many future events fupposed contingent; every future action admitted to be necessary, and yet many actions, in an after view, judged free. Our perceptions are no doubt the teft of truth; which is fo evident, that, in many inflances, no other means are afforded us for coming at the truth. The few exceptions that are discovered by reason or experience, ferve the more to confirm the general rule. But the perceptions we have now laid open can be no test of truth; because, in contradictory propolitions, truth cannot lie on both fides. There is no other way to get out of this labyrinth of doubts and difficulties, but to enter upon a strict furvey both of the material and moral world, which may poffibly lead to a difcovery of what is really the truth of the matter. Let us then proceed, with impartiality and attention, to inquire what we are to believe concerning contingency in events, and liberty or neceffity in human actions : whether our perceptions can be reconciled to each other, and reconciled to truth; or whether there be not here fome

fome of those delusive perceptions which, in other instances above hinted, belong to our nature.

TAKING a view of the material world, we find all things there proceeding in a fixed and fettled train of caufes and effects. It is a point which admits not of dispute, that all the changes produced in matter, and all the different modifications it assumes, are the refult of fixed laws. Every effect is fo precifely determined, that no other effect could, in fuch circumstances, have poffibly refulted from the operation of the caufe : which holds even in the minutest changes of the different elements, as all philosophers admit. Cafual and fluctuating as these feem, even their flightest variations are the refult of pre-cstablished laws. There is a chain of caules and effects which hang one upon another, running through this whole fystem : and not the finallest link of the chain can be broken, without altering the whole conftitution of things, or fufpending the regular operation of the laws of nature. Here then, in the material world, there is nothing that can be called *contingent*; nothing that is left loofe ; but every thing must be precisely what it is, and be found in that flate in which we find it.

In the moral world, this neceffary chain of caufes and effects appears not fo clearly. Man is the actor here. He is endued with will, L and and he acts from choice. He hath a power of beginning motion, which is fubject to no mechanical laws; and therefore he is not under what is called physical necessity. He hath appetites and paffions which prompt him to their respective gratifications : but he is under no neceffity of blindly fubmitting to their impulse. For reafon hath a power of reftraint. It fuggefts motives from the cool views of good and evil. He deliberates upon these. In consequence of his deliberation he chuseth : and here, if any where, lies our liberty. Let us examine to what this liberty amounts. That motives have fome influence in determining the mind, is certain; and that they have this influence in different degrees, is equally certain. The fenfe of honour and gratitude; for example, are powerful motives with a man to ferve a friend. Let the man's private interest concur; and the motives become more powerful. Add the certain profpect of poverty, shame, or bodily fuffering, if he shall act a different part ; and you leave him no choice; the motives to action are rendered irrefiftible. Motives being once allowed to have a determining influence in any degree, it is eafy to suppose the influence so augmented, whether of the fame or of accumulated motives, as to leave little freedom to the mind, or rather none at all. In fuch a cafe, there is no denying that we are under a neceffity to act. And though this, to be fure, is not physical necessity, as arifing,

r

p.

e

ĺŧ.

ſŀs

il.

of

Ŋ

bă

111

0:

ł.

)Ľ

ю.

he

Υŝ

v

í

П

e!

re

Íŗ

er

to

36

ŝ

ぷっ

g

fing, not from the laws of matter, but from the conflitution of the mind; yet in this cafe the confequence is not lefs certain, fixed, and unavoidable, than in that of physical necessity. So evident this is, that, in fome inftances, moral and physical necessity feem to coincide, or fcarcely to be diffinguished. A criminal walks to the fcaffold in the midft of his guards. No man will deny that he is under an abfolute necessity in this cafe. Why ? becaufe he knows, that if he refuse to go, they will drag him. I ask, Is this a physical, or a moral necessity? The answer, at first view, is not obvious ; for the distinction betwixt thefe two feems loft. And yet, strictly fpeaking, it is only a moral neceffity : for it is the force of a motive which determines the criminal to walk to the fcaffold; to wit, that refistance is vain. because the guards can neither be resisted nor corrupted. The idea of necessity, however, in the minds of the spectators, when they view the criminal in this fituation, is not lefs ftrong, than if they faw him bound, and carried on a fledge. Nothing is more common, than to talk of an action which one must do, and cannot avoid. He was compelled to it, we fay, and it was impossible he could act otherwife; when, at the fame time, all the compulfion we mean, is only the application of fome very ftrong motive to the mind. This flows, that, in the judgment of all mankind, a motive may, in certain circumstances, carry in it the L 2 power

Digitized by Google

power of rendering an action neceffary. In other words, we expect fuch an action in confequence of fuch a motive, with equal confidence, as when we expect to fee a flone fall to the ground when it is dropped from the hand.

THIS, it will be faid, may hold in fome inflances, but not in all. For, in the greater part of human actions, there is really a fense of liberty. When the mind hefitates betwixt two things, examines and compares, and at last refolves, is there any compulsion or necessity here? No compulsion, it is granted ; but as to neceffity, let us paufe, and examine more accurately. The refolution being taken, the choice being made, upon what is it founded ? Certainly upon some reason or motive, however silent or weak. No man in his fenfes ever made choice of one thing before another, without being able to affign a reason, weak or strong, for the preference. would be a pregnant mark of idiocy, to fay that one has come to a refolution and cannot fay why. If this be an undoubted fact, it follows of confequence, that the determination must refult from that motive which has the greatest influence for the time; or from what appears the beft and most eligible upon the whole. If motives be different with regard to ftrength and influence, which is plainly the cafe; it is involved in the very idea of the ftrongest motive, that it must have the strongest effect in determining the mind.

mind. This can no more be doubted, than that, in a balance, the greater weight must turn the scale.

HERE perhaps we shall be interrupted. Men are not always rational in their determinations : they often act from whim, passion, humour, motives loofe and variable as the wind. This is admitted. But suppose the motive which determines the mind, to be as whimfical and unreafonable as you pleafe ; its influence, however, is equally necessary with that of the most rational motive. An indolent man, for example, is incited to action, by the ftrongest considerations, which reafon, virtue, intereft, can fuggeft. He wavers and hefitates; at last refifts them all, and folds his arms. What is the caufe of this odd choice ? Is it that he is lefs under the power of motives than another man? By no means. The love of reft is his motive, his prevailing paffion : and this is as effectual to fix him in his place. as the love of glory or riches are, to render active the vain or the covetous. In fhort, if motives be not under our power or direction, which is confesfedly the fact, we can, at bottom, have no liberty. In acting by blind impulse or instinct, which is fometimes the cafe, there is obvioufly no liberty; and with regard to matters which admit deliberation and choice, fuch is our conftitution, that we cannot exert a fingle action, but with fome view, aim, or purpole. At the L 3 ٤. fame

fame time, when two opposite motives prefent themselves, we have not the power of an arbitrary choice. We are necessfarily determined to prefer the stronger motive.

It is true, that, in diffuting upon this fubject of human liberty, a man may attempt to fhow, that motives have no neceffary influence, by eating perhaps the worft apple that is before him, or, in fome fuch trifling inflance, preferring an obvioufly lefs good to a greater. But is it not plain, that the humor of fhowing that he can act againft motives, is, in this cafe, the very motive of the whimfical preference?

A COMPARISON inflituted betwixt moral and phyfical neceffity may poffibly throw additional light upon this fubject. Where the motives to any action are perfectly full, cogent, and clear, the fenfe of liberty, as we showed before, entirely vanitheth. In other cafes, where the field of choice is wider, and where opposite motives counterbalance and work against each other, the mind fluctuates for a while, and feels itfelf more loofe : but, in the end, must as necessarily be determined to the fide of the most powerful motive, as the balance, after feveral vibrations, must incline to the side of the preponderating weight. The laws of mind, and the laws of matter, are in this respect perfectly similar; though, in making the comparison, we are apt to.

to deceive ourfelves. In forming a notion of phyfical neceffity, we feldom think of any force, but what hath vilibly a full effect. A man in prison, or tied to a post, must remain there. If he be dragged along, he cannot refift. Whereas motives, which, from the highest to the lowest. are very different, do not always produce fenfible effects. Yet, when the comparison is accurately inftituted, the very fame thing holds in the actions of matter. A weak motive makes fome impreffion : but, in opposition to one more powerful, it has no effect to determine the mind. In the precise same manner, a small force will not overcome a great refistance; nor the weight of an ounce in one scale, counterbalance a pound in the other. Comparing together the actions of mind and of matter, fimilar caufes will, in both equally, produce fimilar effects.

BUT admitting all that hath been contended for, of the neceffary influence of motives, to bring on the choice or laft judgment of the underftanding, it is urged by Dr Clarke, that man is fiill a free agent, becaufe he hath a power of acting, or beginning motion, according to his will. In this he placeth human liberty, that motives are not phyfical efficient caufes of motion \*. We agree with the Doctor, that the im-

• Vid. his demonstration of the being and attributes, p. 565. fol. edit. and his answer to Collins paffim.

mediate

mediate efficient caule of motion, is not the motive, but the will to act. No perfon ever held, that the pleafure of a fummer-evening, when a man goes abroad into the fields, is the immediate caufe of the motion of his limbs. But what doth this obfervation avail, when the prevailing motive, the will to act, and the action itfelf, are three things infeparably linked together? The motive, according to his own conceffion, necessarily determines the will; and the will neceffarily produces the action, unlefs it be obstructed by some foreign force. Is not the action, by confequence, as necessary, as the will to act; though the motive be the immediate caufe of the will only, and not of the action, or beginning of motion? What doth this author gain, by flowing, that we have a power of beginning motion, if that power never is, never can be, exerted, unless in consequence of some volition or choice, which is neceffarily caufed ? " But," favs he, " it is only a moral neceffity " which is produced by motives; and a moral " necefiity is no necefiity at all, being confiftent " with the highest liberty." If these words have any meaning, the difpute is at an end. For moral neceffity, being that fort of neceffity which affects the mind, and phyfical neceffity that which affects matter, it is plain, that, in all reafonings concerning human liberty, moral neceffity, and no other, is meant to be established. The laws of action, we fay, which respect the human human mind, are as fixed as those which respect matter. The different nature of these laws occassions the fixed consequences of the one to be called *moral*, and of the other to be called *phyfical* necessary. But the idea of *necessary*, *certain*, *unavoidable*, equally agrees to both. And to fay that moral necessary is no necessary at all, because it is not physical necessary, which is all that the Doctor's argument amounts to, is no better, than to argue, that physical necessary no necessary at all, because it is not moral necessfity.

ONE great fource of confusion, in reflecting upon this subject, seems to be, our not diffinguishing betwixt neceffity and constraint. In common language, these are used as equivalent terms; but they ought to be diffinguished when we treat of this subject. A perfon having a strong desire to escape, remains in prison because the doors are guarded. Finding his keepers gone, he makes his escape. His escape now is as necessary, i. e. as certain and infallible a confequence of the circumstances he finds himself in, as his confinement was before; though in the one cafe there is conftraint, in the other none. When, being under no conftraint, we act according to our inclination and choice, our actions, in one fense, may justly be reckoned free. But in another fense they are strictly necessary; because every

every inclination and choice is unavoidably caufed or occafioned by the prevailing motive.

THE preceding reafonings may perhaps make a stronger impression, by being reduced into a fhort argument, after the following manner. When a being acts merely by inftinct, and without any view to confequences, every one must fee, and acknowledge, that the being acts neceffarily. Though not fo obvious, the cafe comes to the fame, where an action is exerted in order to bring about fome end or event. This end or event must be the object of defire; for no man in his fenses, who uses means in order to a certain end, but must wish or defire the means to be effectual. If we do not defire to accomplish an event, we cannot poffibly act in order to bring it about. Defire and action are then intimately connected; fo intimately, that no action can ever be exerted where there is no antecedent defire. The event is first the object of defire, and then we act in order to bring it about. This being fo, it follows clearly, that our actions cannot be free in any fenfe opposed to their being morally neceffary. Our defires obvioufly are not under our own power, but are raifed by means that depend not upon us. And if our defires are not under our power, neither can our actions be under our power. Liberty, as opposed to moral neceffity, if it have any meaning, must fignify a power to act in contradiction to defire; or,

1

or, in other words, a power to act in contradiction to any view, purpole, or delign, we can have in acting; which power, belides that no man was ever confcious of it, feems to be an abfurdity altogether inconfistent with a rational nature.

WITH regard to things supposed fo equal as to found no preference of one to another, it is not neceffary to enter into any intricate inquiry, how the mind in fuch cafes is directed. Though it should be admitted, that where there is no fort of motive to influence the mind, it may act arbitrarily ; this would not affect the preceding reafonings: in which the existence of a motive being once supposed, we have shown the mind to be neceffarily determined. Objects fo balanced one against another, with perfect equality, if fuch inftances are to be found, must be fo few. and in matters fo trivial, (as in the common inftance of eggs), that they cannot have any confiderable influence upon the chain of caufes and effects. It may well admit of a doubt, whether the mind be, in any cafe, left altogether deftitute of a motive to determine its choice betwixt two objects. For though the objects should in themselves be perfectly equal, yet various circumftances, arifing from minute unobserved specialties of fancy, cuftom, proximity of place, &c. may turn the scale in favour of one of the objects. In this state of suspense, betwixt two things

things equally balanced, the uneafinefs one feels, fearching and caffing about for fome ground of choice, proves, that to act altogether arbitrarily is unnatural, and that our conflictution fits us to be determined by motives.

As there is fcarce room for overdoing in explaining the doctrine of necessity, which in fome particulars goes crofs to the common notions of mankind : I shall endeavour to set it in a clear light, by opposing it to physical necessity. Formerly I showed their refemblance, in the article of necessity : I now again compare them, to show in what circumstances they differ. In the first place, a man under the influence of a phyfical caufe is paffive : he is acted upon, and doth not act. Under the influence of a moral caufe. he himfelf acts; and the moral caufe operates, by influencing and determining him to act. Secondly, a phyfical caufe is generally exerted against a man's inclination and will. If the force applied overcome his refutance, he must fubmit; and in this cafe, the necessity is involuntary. It is confirmint or coaction. Phyfical neceffity, however, is not always involuntary. Force may be applied to bring about an event which is a-In this cafe the neceffity is voluntary. greeable. A fhip having, in a ftorm, loft its mafts and rigging, is driven towards the port by a violent wind : the scamen being under the power of a phyfical neceffity, are entirely paffive; but their defi**re** 

defire is to be on fhore. The necessity they are under, corresponds with their defire, and is thereby voluntary. Elias was translated to heaven in a chariot of fire. The necessity was physical, but it was also voluntary. On the other hand. moral necessity is always voluntary. A moral caufe operates not by force or coaction, but by folicitation and perfuasion. It applies to the judgment, and generally affords conviction. But whether or not, it never fails to fucceed with the fenfitive part of our nature, by railing defire; and when a man is under no reftraint, he naturally and neceffarily proceeds to action, in order to accomplish his defire. The action is performed as a means to an end. It is directed by will, and is in the strictest sense voluntary. It is at the fame time necessary : for fuch is the nature of man, that defire always determines the will. Thirdly, physical necessity, except when voluntary, which rarely happens, is extremely difagreeable. But moral neceffity, which is always voluntary, is, for that reason, always agreeable. To nothing is human nature more averfe than to confirmint. On the other hand, our condition is always agreeable when we enjoy the freedom of our own will. Fourthly, a man impelled by a physical cause, and acted upon involuntarily, must be fensible of the force and coaction, and confequently of the necessity he is under. A moral cause is in a very different condition. As it influences by perfuasion, and not force. м

force, it may well be fuppofed to operate, without difcovering itfelf to be a neceffary caufe. And, in fact, that it fo operates, is evident from conftant experience. We have no intuitive perception, nor direct confcioufnefs, of the neceffary connection that links will to defire. This connection would to us be a dead fecret, were it not brought to light by a long and painful reafoning. And hence the ignorance, almost univerfal, of our being neceffary agents.

AND this luckily fuggefts a thought, [which is, to compare moral necessity with a power to act against motives, termed commonly liberty of indifference. To convince men that they are neceffary agents, is, I am sensible, a difficult undertaking. Voluntary neceffity is in the courfe of life never felt; and for this reason, we find in common language no term for it. It is not otherways discoverable, but by deep thinking, and by a long chain of abstract reasoning. It is therefore known to philosophers only, who give it the name of moral neceffity. Hence it is, that when we talk of neceffity, the groß of mankind are apt to take the alarm; because they can form no idea of necessity, different from that of constraint, where the necessity is involuntary. We have thus natural prejudice and prepoffeffion to ftruggle with, which are not to be furmounted, till the heart be pre-engaged to receive a favourable impression. The comparison proposed will,

ł

will, I am hopeful, place moral neceffity in a light that will make it be generally relified. Moral neceffity. as has been observed, is always agreeable. An action, provided it be voluntary. is not the lefs agreeable by being neceffary. So far from it, that the necessity and agreeablencis are infeparable, as proceeding from the fame caufe. An action is neceffary, becaufe it is directed by defire: it is at the fame time agreeable, because it tends to the accomplishment of defire. And from this it clearly follows, that the greater the necessity is, the greater must alfo be the pleafure. And now to the other member of the comparison. It is difficult to form a conception of a power to act, without motives. or any thing to influence the mind. But fuppofing fuch a power, it must be devoid of all pleafure or fatisfaction, even when exercifed without croffing any appetite or paffion. It is ftill more difficult to form a conception of a power to act in contradiction to motives, and confequently in contradiction to defire ; for thefe are inseparable. But such power, if it can exist. must be extremely disagreeable : for here a man acting in contradiction to his defires, must, of courfe, render himfelf miserable. In this circumstance, liberty of indifference coincides with physical necessity. For when a man lies open to have his most rational and best-concerted fchemes disappointed, it comes to the fame in point of distress, whether the disappointment be M 2 occafioned

occasioned by an internal or an external cause. Would any man defire such a power, could he obtain it by a wish; a power which would form a contradiction in his nature, and be in a great measure subversive of his happines?

But now a thought comes across the mind, which demands attention. How hard is the lot of the human species, to be thus tied down, and fixed by motives; fubjected by a necessary law to the choice of evil, if evil happen to be the prevailing motive, or if it mislead us under the form of our greatest interest or good ! How happy to have had a free independent power of acting, contrary to motives, when the prevailing motive hath a bad tendency ! By this power we might have pushed our way to virtue and happinels, whatever motives were fuggefted by vice and folly to draw us back; or we might, by arbitrary will, have refrained from acting the bad part, though all the power of motives concurred to urge us on. So far well. But let us fee whither this will carry us. This arbitrary power being once supposed, may it not be exerted against good motives as well as bad ones ? If it do us good by accident, in restraining us from vice, may it not do us ill by accident, in reftraining us from virtue ? and fo shall we not be thrown loofe altogether ? At this rate, we could not rely on any man. Promifes, oaths, vows, would be vain; for nothing can ever

ever bind or fix one who is influenced by no motive. The diffinction of characters would be at an end : for a perfon cannot have a character, who hath no fixed nor uniform principles of action. Nay, moral virtue itfelf, and all the force of law, rule, and obligation, would, upon this hypothesis, be nothing. For no creature can be the fubject of rational or moral government, whole actions, by the conflitution of its nature, are independent of motives, and whole will is capricious and arbitrary. To exhort, to inftruct, to promife, to threaten, would be to no purpose. In short, such a creature, if such could exift, would be a most bizarre and unaccountable being ; a mere abfurdity in nature, whofe exiftence could ferve no end. Were we fo conftituted, as always to be determined by the moral fense, even against the strongest countermotives : this would be confistent with human nature, becaufe it would preferve entire the connection that, by an unalterable law, is established betwixt the will and the prevailing motive. But to break this connection altogether; to introduce an unbounded arbitrary liberty, in opposition to which motives should not have influence, would be, inflead of amending, to deform and unhinge the human constitution. No reason have we therefore to regret, that we find the will neceffarily fubjected to motives: unless we would rather have man to be a whimfical and ridiculous, than a rational and moral being.

THUS

THUS far have we advanced in our argument, that all human actions proceed in a fixed and neceffary train. Man being what he is, a creature endued with a certain degree of understanding, certain paffions and principles, and placed in certain ci-cumstances, it is impossible he should will or chuse otherways than in fact he wills or chufes. His mind is paffive in receiving impreffions of things as good or ill : according to thefe impressions, the last judgment of the understanding is necessarily formed; which the will, if confidered as different from the laft judgment of the understanding, necessarily obeys, as is fully fhown: and the external action is neceffarily connected with the will, or the mind's final determination to act.

In the courfe of this reafoning, we have abflracted from all controverfies about divine prefcience and decree; though in fact, from what hath been proved, it appears, that the Divine Being decrees all future events: for he who gave fuch a nature to his creatures, and placed them in fuch circumftances, as that a certain train of actions behoved neceffarily to follow; he, I fay, who did this, and who muft have forefeen the confequences, did certainly refolve or decree, that events fhould fall out, and men fhould act as they do. Prefcience indeed is not, properly fpeaking, any caufe of events. For events do not happen, becaufe they are forefeen ; but

Ì

but becaufe they are certainly to happen, therefore they are capable of being forefeen. Though preficience doth not caufe, yet it undoubtedly fuppoles, the certain futurition (as fchoolmen fpeak) of events. And were there not caufes which render the existence of future events certain, it would involve a contradiction, to maintain, that future events could be certainly forefeen. But I avoid carrying the reader any further into fuch thorny difputes.

THE fum of what we have discovered concerning the impressions we have of contingency in events, and liberty in actions, is this. Comparing together the moral and the material world. every thing is as much the refult of eftablished laws in the one as in the other. There is no. thing in the whole universe that can properly be called contingent, that may be, or may not be ; nothing loofe and fluctuating in any part of nature; but every motion in the material, and every determination and action in the moral world, are directed by immutable laws ; fo that, whilft these laws remain in their force, not the fmalleft link of the universal chain of causes and effects can be broken, nor any one thing be o. therways than it it \*.

#### Тне

• As to an objection, of making God the author of fin, which may feem to arife from our fyltem, it is rather popular than philofophical. Sin, or moral turpitude, lies in the evil intention of him who commits it. It consists in fome wrong or depraved affection

Digitized by Google

THE doctrine of universal necessity being thus laid open, and proved to be the true fystem of nature, we proceed to a most important speculation; which is, to confider how far it is confiftent with our moral fentiments, and in particular with those of praise, blame, merit, demerit, guilt, &c. While we continue uncertain as to this point, we cannot have any just or accurate notion of morals. The doctrine of liberty and neceffity is, in this view, worthy of great attention; and in this view chiefly was it undertaken. To find our actions governed by a law repugnant to the foregoing moral fentiments, which are natural and univerfal, would, in the human constitution, be a puzzling circumstance. It would argue a defect or inconfistence, not uncommon in works of art, but rare, if at all to be found, in any work of nature. And yet we have occasion to be alarmed, when we hear

fection supposed to be in the sinner. Now, the intention of the Deity is unerringly good. The end proposed by him is order and general happinels : and there is the greatest reason to believe, that all events are so directed by him, as to work towards this end. In the prefent fystem of things, some moral diforders are indeed included. No doubt, it is a confiderable difficulty, how evil comes to be in the world, feeing God is perfectly good. But this difficulty is not peculiar to our doctrine; but recurs upon us at last with equal force, whatever hypothesis we embrace. For moral evil cannot exift, without being, at leaft, permitted by the Deity. And with regard to a first cause, PERMITTING is the fame thing with CAUSING; fince against his will nothing can poffibly happen. All the schemes that have been contrived for answering this objection, are but the tortoile introduced to support the elephant. They put the difficulty a flep further off, but never remove it.

the

i

the advocates for liberty of indifference reason in the following manner. " If action (fay they) " be necessary, and if we know it to be fo, " what ground can there be for reprehension and " blame, for felf-condemnation and remorfe ? " If a clock were sensible of its own motions, " knowing that they proceed according to ne-" ceffary laws, could it find fault with itfelf for " ftriking wrong ? Would it not rather blame " the artift, who had ill adjusted the wheels on " which its movements depend? They urge " accordingly, that, upon the fystem of necessity, " the moral conflicution of our nature is totally " overturned. There is an end to all the opera-" tions of confcience about right and wrong. " Man is no longer a moral agent, nor the fub-" ject of praife or blame for what he does." Supposing our actions to be subjected to the law of necessity, this is a strong attack upon human nature; and better a thousand times give up this fystem we have been contending for, than acknowledge that man is incapable of morality. But let us not be rash in relinquishing a system that appears to be fo well supported. Upon a narrower inspection, it may possibly be discovered, that the moral sense is concordant with neceffity, and that the connection betwixt defire and will is no obftacle to approbation and difapprobation, praife and blame. To have a just conception of this matter, we must examine carefully by what particular circumstances thefe moral

moral fentiments are occasioned. In this view, I observe, in the first place, that an action is always approved when it proceeds from a virtuous motive, and confequently hath a good aim or tendency. The connection betwixt the motive and the action, fo far from diminishing, is the very circumftance that conflitutes the morality of the action. The greater the influence of the motive, the greater the virtue of the actor, and the stronger our approbation. Do we not even praife one for modefty or fweetnefs of temper ? The Deity is an object of the higheft praise, for this very reafon that he is neceffarily good. . On the other hand, an action is difapproved, when it proceeds from a vitious motive; and the more influence the motive had on the agent, the greater his vice, and the stronger our disapprobation. We are obvioufly fo conflituted, as to blame ourfelves, even when we have the clearest conviction of inability to behave better. A coward is confcious that he has no heart to encounter danger, and that he will certainly turn his back upon the approach of an enemy. Though he knows that he cannot help this weaknefs, yet he accufes and blames himfelf. He cannot help cenfuring himfelf in this manner, more than he can help his weaknefs, or more than he can help being ashamed of it. Upon the fame foundation are evidently built our notions of rewards and punishments. If virtue ought to be rewarded, that man hath the best claim,

claim, who is virtuous by the confliction of his nature, and upon whom a vitious motive never hath the fmalleft influence. On the other hand, no man is more guilty, or more deferving of punifhment, than he who, by his nature, hath the ftrongeft propenfity to vice, and upon whom virtuous motives have little or no effect.

Bur, in the foregoing inftances, it will be urged, that the man we praife or blame had it in his power to act a different part ; that we praise him for a benevolent action, or blame him for one that is fordid, becaufe fuch action was his choice when he could have abstained from it. I admit, that in all our moral fentiments a power is fuppofed fuch as is here defcribed. But when we attentively examine the nature of this power. we find it to be a phyfical power only, viz. a power to act according to our will, not a power to act against it. A man, in doing what is worthy of praise or blame, must be free from external coaction, and at liberty to follow his own choice. This power or freedom, which is perfectly confistent with moral or voluntary neceffity, is evidently the only power which morality requires. Supposing only a man is free to act as he pleafes, we currently praife or blame him for the part he acts, without requiring any other condition. We demand not that he should have a power to act in contradiction to his own defire and choice. The idea of fuch power enters not into

into any of our moral fentiments : on the contrary, if the nature of any individual be either fo good or fo bad, as that he could not avoid being determined to the choice he made, he on that very account is the more praifed or blamed.

I ENFORCE this doctrine, by confidering the operation of confcience with respect to guilt. I have done a bad action which fills me with remorfe. The first fentiment that arifes. is. that I cught to have done otherways, or that it was my duty to have done otherways; which. in effect is blaming myself, or my nature, for not being fufficiently influenced by duty. Another fentiment also arises, that I might or could have done otherways. After the firictest analysis of this sentiment, it will be found to relate to physical power merely. " I was com-" pelled by no force ; I could have acted a dif-" ferent part had I been fo inclined; and this " unhappy action was my own choice and vo-" luntary deed."

i

WE then find, that the moral fentiments have their full fwing, without fuppofing liberty of indifference, or any thing like a power to act againft our own will. Nor can l even conceive, that fuch power, fuppofing it real, could add any fpring or force to the moral fenfe. When a man commits a crime, let us fuppofe, for a moment, he could have refifted the prevailing motive;

tive ; the question upon this occurs, Why did he not refift ? why did he yield to the vitious motive, and bring upon himfelf shame and mifery ? The answer must be, for no other can be given. That his disposition was bad, that he is a wretch, a miscreant, and deferves to be detested and abhorred. Here we clearly fee, upon the prefent supposition, as well as upon that of neceffity, that praife and blame reft ultimately upon the disposition or frame of mind; that a virtuous disposition is the only object of praife, and a vitious disposition the only object of blame. It is therefore a fond conceit, to espouse the chimerical fystem of liberty of indifference, as necessary to explain our moral sentiments. These sentiments are perfectly concordant with the fystem of voluntary necessity; and supposing liberty of indifference, we cannot even conceive how it should make man a more proper subject of moral fentiments, than in fact he is, confidered as a neceffary being.

I PROCEED one step farther; which is, to make out, that liberty of indifference, so far from being implied in the moral sentiments of praise and blame, would in some measure cramp the moral sense, and blunt the sentiments arising from it. In order to put this matter in its true light, I muss state a case. A man tempted to betray his trust, deliberates, wavers, but at last rejects the offered bribe, and adheres to his duty. N Another

Another man, without the least deliberation, rejects with difdain the bribe, and confiders the offer as a high injury. Which of these perfons is the most virtuous, and which of them merits the greatest praise, no one is at a loss to fay. This familiar example is given to illustrate the influence that liberty of indifference must have on our moral fentiments. A power of relifting the strongest motives, must imply a wavering and fluctuation of the mind, betwixt the motives, and the power of reliftance; for, by the suppotition, the mind has both to chufe on. If fo, a man endued with liberty of indifference is justly reprefented by the perfon first described, fluctuating and wavering betwixt a virtuous and vitious motive; and upon that account the actions of a man endued with liberty of indifference, will, in the estimation of all mankind, be less praise or blame worthy, than the actions of a man who is unerringly directed by the ftrongeft motive without wavering or fluctuating. And indeed. after all, it would found extremely harfh, that a good or an evil tendency, fo flight as to leave power in the mind to refift it, should be an object of greater praise or blame, than a tendency to strong as to leave no power of refutance. Viewing the matter in this light, it evidently appears, that a power to act against motives, fo far from being necessary to found praise or blame, would, if it really did exift, detract confiderably from both.

HAVING

HAVING flown that our moral fentiments are perfectly concordant with moral necessity, I urge, in the next place, that no other fystem of action, allowing the utmost liberty of supposition, can lay a better foundation for praise or blame, or any moral fentiment, than the fyftem of voluntary necessity doth. It is, I hope, made evident, that liberty of indifference, or a power to act against motives, lays not fo good a foundation; and in place of it, I cannot imagine another fystem that will better answer the purpose. In judging of moral fentiments, an error is extremely apt to creep in. We have a clear conception, that a man under coaction or external force, can neither be praifed nor blamed for what he doth. He had not power to do otherways, and therefore he is innocent. This reflection we unwarily apply to moral necessity, not adverting to the substantial difference betwixt a voluntary and involuntary action. A man in his own confcience is made accountable for every voluntary action. It is not regarded, whether he had or had not a power of refiftance; and we have shown, that this circumstance ought not to be regarded. And indeed, as observed above, a power of refistance, were it the fystem of nature, fo far from contributing to praife or blame, would have no other effect but to leffere both.

of indifference, arifeth, I am fenfible, from a laudable caufe. It is conceived to be more confiftent with our fentiments of morality, than the fystem of necessity is. This opinion, when examined, is found to be erroneous. A man who is necessarily good or bad by the conflictution of his nature, deferves more to be praifed or blamed than he would be, fuppoling him to have a power of refifting all motives, and acting against them. And indeed, as every action doth in effect proceed from an internal caufe, viz. a virtuous or vitious temper, praise or blame must ultimately reft upon this caufe, and not upon the external action, or the power of acting. This. confideration ought to make us chearfully abandon a fystem which is chimerical, and which at the fame time is lefs concordant with the moral fense. than the true system of necessity is.

AND this leads me to inquire, whence the delufive notion of liberty of indifference? for furely it could not be generally efpoufed without fome foundation. We have had occafion to obferve, that we have no intuitive perception or direct confcioufnefs of our being neceffary agents; and that this branch of our nature is hid from the generality of mankind. The knowledge of it, not being neceffary for our well-being, is left to be gathered by reafoning and reflection. We are however intuitively confcious of freedom of action, and of a power exifting in

In us to act according to our will and choice. This power is far from being the fame with that of willing and chufing in an arbitrary manner; and yet, in fuperficial thinking, we are apt to confound thefe two powers, and to confider them as the fame. Power indeed is with mankind a favourite idea, and we are prone to adopt any fyftem which feems to extend it. The operations of the will, befides, are fubtile and delicate; and, with the bulk of mankind, a power to chufe, and a power to act according to that choice, though effentially diffinct, pafs readily the one for the other.

HAVING discovered, that the moral sense is perfectly concordant with moral or voluntary neceffity; as alfo, that we have no fuch thing naturally as a fense of power to act in contradiction to our inclination and choice; I proceed to a more particular examination of the fenfe of contingency, in the view chiefly to discover, if poffible, whether it have any deeper root in our nature, than the erroneous conviction of liberty of indifference. In our ordinary train of thinking, it is certain, that all events appear not to us as neceffary. A multitude of events feem to be under our power to caufe or to prevent ; and we readily make a diffinction betwixt events that are neceffary, i.e. that must bey and events that are contingent, i.e. that may be or may not be. This diffinction is void of truth; for all things that N 3

Digitized by Google

the de

· ? It

WITTER

1 to ob

ntion of

fary a

re is hid

5now.

well-be-

and te

rlcious

willing

'n

that fall out either in the material or moral world, are, as we have seen, alike necessary, and alike the refult of fixed laws. Yet whatever conviction a philosopher may have of this, the diffinction betwixt things necessary, and things contingent, possessies his common train of thought, as much as it possesses the most illiterate. We act univerfally upon this diffinction : nay, it is in truth the caufe of all the labour, care, and induftry of mankind. I illustrate this doctrine by an example. Conftant experience hath taught us, that death is a necessary event. The human frame is not made to last for ever in its prefent condition; and no man thinks of more than a: temporary existence upon this globe. But the particular time of our death appears a contingent event. However certain it be, that the time and manner of the death of each individual is determined by a train of preceding caufes, and is not lefs fixed than the hour of the fun's rifing or fetting; yet no perfon is affected by this doctrine. In the care of prolonging life, we are directed by the fuppofed contingency of the time of death; which, to a certain term of years, we confider as depending in a great measure on ourfelves, by caution against accidents, due use of food, exercise, &c. These means are prosecuted with the fame diligence, as if there were in fact no neceffary train of caufes to fix the period of life. In fhort, whoever attends to his own practical ideas; whoever reflects upon the meaning 1

mea

in al that eve clear or no ftabli

Sc Whi cy ? count find to

• т mous Stoics. as Cice nion. verum : said non ed, the fible to . no dout this wa the nat hand, j future e this he ceffity; ten imb. his book falency. in oppol doctrine Tatio, t Cxpreil phers

percupt

meaning of the following words, which occur in all languages, of things *poffible*, *contingent*; *that are in our power to caufe or prevent*; whoever, I fay, reflects upon thefe words, will clearly fee, that they fuggeft certain perceptione or notions, repugnant to the doctrine above c=ftablished, of universal necessity \*:

So ftands the fact, and the quefiion is,. Whence proceeds this delufive fenfe of contingency? Is it original, or can it otherwife be accounted for? Reflecting upon this fubject, I. find that uniform events are underftood to be ne-

t

1

\* This repugnancy of perception to truth, gave rife to the famous diffute concerning things poffible, among the ancient Stoics, who held this doftrine of universal neceffity. Diodorus, as Cicero informs us in his book de fato, cap. 7. held this opinion, 1d folum fieri posse, quod aut verum sit, aut futurum sit verum; at quicquid futurum sit, id dicit sieri necesse esse. quid non fit futurum, id negat fieri poffe : that is, He maintained, there is nothing contingent in future events, nothing poli fible to happen, but that precife event which will happen. This. no doubt, was carrying their fystem its due length : though, in. this way of fpeaking, there is fomething that manifeftly flocks the natural perceptions of mankind. Chryfippus, on the other hand, fensible of its harshness, maintained, that it is possible for future events to happen otherways than in fact they happen. In this he was certainly inconfiltent with his general fystem of neceffity ; and therefore, as Cicero gives us to understand, was of ten imbarraffed in the dispute with Diodorus : and Plutarch, in his book de repugnantiis Stoicarum, exposes him for this inconfiltency. But Chryfippus chofe to follow his natural perceptions in oppolition to philosophy; holding by this, that Diodorus's doctrine of nothing being poffible but what happens, is ignava ratio, tending to ablolute inaction; cui fi percamus, as Cicero expresses it, nibil omnino agamus in vita. So early were philosophers fensible of the difficulty of reconciling speculation with. perception, as to this doctrine of fate.

ceffary, fuch as day and night, winter and fummer, death, &c.; but events in which there are any degrees of variety, fuch as the time of death, good or bad weather, &c. are generally understood to be contingent. Does our sense of contingency arife from the uncertainty of the event ? Hardly fo; for uncertainty cannot naturally have any other effect upon the mind, than to produce a confciousnels of our ignorance. The fense of contingency, then, with respect to things uncertain, must be pronounced an original law in our nature. By this law we are made to conceive many future events as in themfelves uncertain, and as having no determined caufe of existence. Contingency in this view may justly be confidered as a fecondary quality, which hath no real existence in things; but, like other fecondary qualities, is made to appear as an attribute of events, in order to ferve the purpoles of human life.

THIS fenfe of contingency in events, which I now hold to be original, regards not only events in the material world, but alfo events which arife from moral caufes, or the aftivity of man.. The event of a pitched battle betwixt two armies equal in numbers and in difcipline, every one deems to be in fome measure contingent. When a man is apt to waver in his refolutions, the courfe he will fleer is reckoned a matter of chance or contingency. But how can the fenfe of l

u

ł

fa

0

W

n L

ſ

ы

0]

w

t

J

Ć

of contingency in this cafe be reconciled to the doctrine of our being necessary agents? We shall see anon an extreme beneficial final cause of the fenfe of contingency, with respect to actions as well as events; and to this end there appears a very wife contrivance of nature. A fense of necessity would, no doubt, be directly contradictory to the fense of contingency; and both could not subsist together. To make way therefore for the scale of contingency, the necelfary connection betwixt define and will is kept out of fight; and by this contrivance it is, that we are not fensible of being necessary agents. The discovery that we are fo, proceeds from a long train of reasoning; and the conviction which arifes from a process of reasoning, is too faint to counterbalance an intuitive perception or original lense of contingency.

THUS then we find in the moral world a cafe where truth contradicts the natural notions of mankind; where it prefents to us, with irrefiftible evidence, the fyftem of univerfal neceffity, upon which we never regulate our conduct, but are fo formed as to act upon notions quite opposite. What shall be done in this cafe ? Muft we facrifice truth to fenfe ? or muft we adhere to truth, and force tenfe into a compliance ? Neither. Truth is too rigid to bend to our perceptions; and these are too vigorous to be fubdued by abstract reasoning. The attempt is vain, *pugnantia* 

pugnantia fecum, frontibus adversis, componere. Ler us be honess then: let us fairly own that truth is on the fide of necessity; but that it was proper for man to be formed with such notions of contingency, as would fit him for the part he hath to act. This thought leads us to a final cause, which I shall now endeavour to explain.

THE Deity is the primary caufe of all things. In his infinite mind he formed the great plan of government which is carried on by laws fixed and immutable. Thefe laws produce a regular train of caufes and effects in the moral as well as material world, bringing about those events which are comprehended in the original plan. and admitting the possibility of none other. This universe is a vast machine, winded up and fet a-going. The feveral fprings and wheels operate uneringly one upon another. The hand advanceth, and the clock firikes, precifely as the artift hath determined. Whoever hath just ideas, and a true tafte of philosophy, will see this to be the real theory of the universe; and that, upon any other theory, there can be no general order. no whole, no plan, no means nor end in its administration. In this plan, man, a rational creature, bears his part, and fulfils certain ends for which he was defigned. He must be an actor. and must act with confciousness and spontaneity. He exercifes thought and reafon, and his nature is

i

is improved by the due use of these rational powers. Confequently, it is necessary, that he fhould have some sense of things possible and contingent, things depending upon himfelf to cause, that he may be led to a proper exercise of that activity for which he was defigned. But as a fense of necessity would be a perpetual contradiction to the fenfe of contingency, it was well ordered, that his being a necessary agent should be hid from him. To have had his instinctive perceptions, his practical ideas, formed upon the plan of universal necessity; to have feen himfelf a part of that great machine, winded up, and fet a-going, by the author of his nature, would have been inconfistent with the part that is allotted him to act. Then indeed the ignava ratio, the inactive doctrine of the Stoics, would have followed. Conceiving nothing to be contingent, or depending upon himfelf to cause, there would have been no room for forethought about futurity, nor for any fort of industry and care. He would have had no motives to action, but immediate fensations of pleafure and pain. He must have been formed like the brutes, who have no other principle of action but mere inftinct. The few inftincts he is at prefent endued with, would have been altogether infufficient. He must have had an instinct to fow, another to reap; he must have had inflincts to purfue every conveniency, and perform every office of life. In fhort, reason and thought

thought could not have been exercised in the way they are, that is, man could not have been man, had he not been furnished with a sense of contingency, and also been kept in ignorance of his being a neceffary agent. In this, as in all things elfe, the divine wildom and goodnefs are most admirable. As, in the material world, the Almighty hath formed our fenfes, not for the discovery of the intimate nature and effences of things, but for the uses and conveniencies of life; as he hath, in feveral inftances, exhibited natural objects to us, not in their real, but in a fort of artificial view, clothed with fuch diffinctions and productive of fuch fensations as are for the benefit of man ; fo he hath exhibited the intellectual world to us in a like artificial view, clothed with certain colours and diffinctions, imaginary, but useful. Life is conducted according to this artificial view of things; and by our speculations is not in the least affected. Let the philosopher meditate in his closet upon abstract truth : let him be ever fo much convinced of the fettled neceffary train of caufes and effects, which leaves nothing, properly speaking, in his power; yet the moment he comes forth into the world he acts as a free agent \*. And.

• It appears from the poets, (fee Pope's Iliad, book 6. 1. 624.), that among the Greeks, an enlightened and inquifitive people, the doctrine of tate or detliny prevailed. Yet when one's evil defliny was foretold, even by the moft celebrated crack, this never had any other effect than sedoubling the perfon's diligence

And, what is wonderful, though in this he acts upon a false supposition, yet he is not thereby misled from the ends of action, but, on the contrary, fulfils them to better advantage.

IT will now be proper to answer fome objec. tions which may be urged against the doctrine we have advanced \*. One, which at first may feem of confiderable weight, is, That it feems to reprefent

gence to avoid the impending evil. Such authority have natural impreffions, in opposition to abstract reasoning, and even to the most facred authority.

\* I acknowledge it to have been once my opinion, that we have a delusive sense of power to act against motives, or to act against our own inclination and choice, commonly termed liberty of indifference. I was carried along by the current of popular opinion; and I could not dream this fense to be a pure imagination. when I found it vouched by fo many grave writers. I had at the fame time a thorough conviction, from the clearest evidence, that man is a neceffary agent; and therefore I justly concluded, that the fenfe of liberty of indifference, like that of contingency, must be delusive. I yielded to another popular opinion, That the perceptions of the moral fense, praise and blame, merit and demerit, guilt and remorfe, are inconfistent with neceffity, and must be founded upon the delusive sense of liberty of indifference. From these premisses, I was obliged, though reluctantly, to admit, that fome of the most noted perceptions and emotions of the moral fenfe are entirely built upon this delusive fenfe of liberty. The fubject being handled after that manner in the first edition of this book, I was sensible of the odium of a doctrine that rests virtue in any measure upon a delusion; and I stated this as the first objection, in order to remove it the best way I could. Candor I thall always effeem effential in speaking to the public, not less than in private dealings; and my opinion of the wildom of providence in the government of this world, is fo firmly established, that I never can be apprehenfive of harm in adhering to truth, however fingular it may appear upon fome occasions. I now chearfully acknowledge my errors; and am happy in thinking, that I have at last got into the right track. It appears to me at

Digitized by Google

represent the Deity as acting deceitfully by his creatures. He hath given them certain notions of contingency in events, by which he hath, in a manner, forced them to act upon a falfe hypothefis; as if he were unable to carry on the government of this world, did his creatures conceive things according to the real truth. This objection is, in a great measure, obviated, by what is observed in the introduction to this effay. It is univerfally allowed by modern philosophers, that the perceptions of our external fenfes do not always correspond to strict truth, but are fo contrived, as rather to answer useful purposes. Now, if it be called a deceit in our fenses, not to give us just representations of the material world, the Deity must be the author of this deceit, as much as he is of that which prevails in the moral world. But no just objection can lie against the conduct of the Deity, in either cafe. Our fenses, both internal and external, are given us for different ends and purpofes : fome to discover truth, others to make us happy and virtuous. The fenfes which are appropria-

prefent a harsh doctrine, that virtue in any part should be founded on a delusion, though formerly the supposed truth of the doctrine reconciled me to it. It gives me folid fatisfaction, to find the moral sense entirely consistent with voluntary necessity, which I must pronounce to be the system of nature. The moral sense makes a chief branch of the original constitution of man; and it can never lose its authority, while we have any feeling of pleasure and pain. According to this plan of morality, the objection, That it is partly founded on a delusion, vanisheth; and the objection, for that reason, is dropt in the prefent edition.

ted

ł

ted to the discovery of truth, unerringly anfwer their end. So do the fenses which are ap. propriated to virtue and happinels. And, in this view, the objection vanisheth, because it amounts but to this, that the fame fense doth not answer both ends. As to the other branch of the objection, That it must imply imperfection in the Deity, if he cannot govern this world without deluding his creatures; I answer, That there is nothing in the foregoing doctrine which can justly argue imperfection in the Deity. For it is abundantly plain, first, that it is a more perfect state of things, and more worthy of the Deity, to have all events going on with unbroken order, in a fixed train of causes and effects, than to have every thing defultory and contingent. And if fuch a being as man was to be placed in this world, to act his present part, it was necessary, that he should have a notion of contingency in events, and of power to direct and control them. The objection therefore, on the whole, amounts to no more, than that the Deity cannot work contradictions. For if it was fit and wife, that man should think and act as an independent being, having power to regulate his own actions, and, by means of these, to regulate also future events; it was impossible this could be otherways accomplished, than by enduing him with a fense of this power: and if it was also fit and wife, that universal necessity should be the real plan of the universe, this sense must be delusive. Q 2 And,

6

计运入时间

å

And, after all, feeing our happinels, in many inflances, is placed upon delutive perceptions, why fhould it puzzle us, that our activity is promoted by the fame means? No one confiders it as an imputation on the Deity, that we are fo framed as to perceive what is not, viz. beauty, grandeur, colour, heat or cold, as exifting in objects, when fuch perceptions, though delutive, contribute to our happinels : and yet our happinels depends greatly more on action than on any of thefe perceptions.

١

ł

THE foregoing objection may perhaps be turned into a different shape. If it was necessary for man to be conflituted with fuch an artificial fenfe, why was he endued with fo much knowledge as to unravel the mystery ? What purpofe does it ferve, to let in just fo much light, as to difcover the difguifed appearance of the moral world, when it was intended that his conduct should be adjusted to this difguifed appearance? To this I answer, first, That the discovery, when made, is not attended with any bad confequence; and next, that a good confequence, of very great importance, refults from it. No bad confequence, I fay, enfues from the difcovery, that contingency, and power to regulate our own conduct, are delusive perceptions : for the cafe is confessedly parallel in the material world, where no harm hath enfued. After we have difcovered, by philosophy, that feveral of the appearances

pearances of nature are only uleful illusions: that fecondary qualities exist not in matter; and that the perceptions of our external fenfes, in various instances, do not correspond to philosophic truth ; after these discoveries are made, do they in the least affect even the philosopher himfelf, in ordinary action ? Doth not he, in common with the reft of mankind, proceed, as it is fit he should, upon the common system of appearances and natural perceptions? As little, in the present case, do our speculations about liberty and necessity unhinge the plan of nature. Upon the common fystem we do and must act; and no difcoveries made concerning the illusive nature of our perceptions, can disappoint in any degree the intention of the Deity.

Ē

. 0

5,

**)**•

e,

p.

0

12 前 12 平 1

ĺ

BUT this is not all. These discoveries are alfo of excellent use; as they furnish us with one of the strongest arguments for the existence of the Deity, and as they fet the wifdom and goodnefs of his providence in the most striking light. Nothing carries more express characters of defign, nothing can be conceived more oppolite to chance, than a plan fo artfully contrived, for adjusting our impressions and feelings to the purpoles of life. For here things are carried off, as it were, from the straight line; taken out of the course in which they would of themfelves proceed; and formoulded, as forcibly, and against their nature, to be subservient to 0 3 man.

man. He doth not receive the impression of the moral world in the fame manner as wax receives the impression of a feal; he doth not reflect the image of it in the fame manner as a mirror reflects its images. He hath a peculiar cast and turn given to his conceptions, admirably adjusted to the part allotted him to act. These conceptions are indeed illusive; yet, which is wonderful, it is by this very circumstance, that, in man, two of the most opposite things in nature are happily reconciled, liberty and neceffity; having this illustrious effect, that in him are accumulated all the prerogatives both of a neceffary and free agent. The difcovery of fuch a marvellous adjustment, which is more directly opposed to chance than any other thing conceivable, must necessarily give us the strongcft impression of a wife defigning cause. And now a fufficient reason appears, for fuffering man to make this furpriling discovery. The Almighty hath admitted us fo far into his counfels, as to afford the justeft foundation for admiring and adoring his wifdom. It is a remark worthy to be made, that the capacities of man feem in general to have a tendency beyond the wants and occasions of his present state. This hath often been observed with respect to his wifnes and defires. The fame holds as to his intellectual faculties, which fometimes, as in the inflance before us, run beyond the limits of what at prefent is necessary for him to know, and

١.

I

and let in upon him fome glimmerings of higher and nobler difcoveries. A veil is thrown over nature, where it is not ufeful for him to behold it : and yet fometimes, by turning afide that veil a very little, he is admitted to a fuller view; that his admiration of nature, and the God of nature, may be increafed; that his curiofity and love of truth may\_be fed; and perhaps that fome *augurium*, fome intimation may be given, of his being defigned for a future, more exalted flate of being; when attaining the full maturity of his nature, he fhall no longer fland in need of artificial imprefions, but fhall perceive and act according to the fluicteft truth of things.

Digitized by Google

# APPEN-

## A P P E N D I X.

## Containing the substance of a pamphlet writ in defence of the foregoing Essay.

WITH respect to liberty and necessity, our author's doctrine may be comprised under the following heads. 1. That man is a rational being, endued with liberty. 2. That his liberty confifts in acting voluntarily, or according to his inclination and choice. 3. That his will is neceffarily, that is, infallibly and certainly, determined by motives; or, in the ftyle of the schools, voluntas necessario sequitur ultimum judicium intellectus practici. 4. That, confequently, liberty of indifference, or an arbitrary power of acting, without or against motives, is no part of human nature. 5. That though human actions proceed in a fixed train, this is owing to no blind fate, but to the predestination or decree of God, who is the first caufe of all things.

١.

1

CONCERNING these points philosophers and divines may differ in opinion, and each fide may, and will impute error to the other; but that, by any of the church of Scotland, fuch opinions should be censured as unsound or heterodox, shows great ignorance, when they are espoused by

Digitized by Google

165

by our first great reformers, and inculcated in all the most noted fystems of theology, compofed by Calvinist divines, and taught in our universities. With us it is a fundamental principle, That God from all eternity hath foreordained whatever comes to pass; that all events are immutably and neceffarily fixed by the decree of God, and cannot happen in any other way than he hath predetermined. But the most orthodox divines agree with our author, not only in his doctrine of necessity, as founded on the decree of God ; but likeways in his account of that rational or moral necessity, which is effectuated by the operation of motives on the will. They hold, with him, that liberty is opposed, not to neceffity, but to confiraint; that it confills, not in indifference, but in spontaneity, or lubentia rationalis; and that the will necessarily follows the last judgment of the understanding. They shew, that none of the confequences follow, which are endeavoured to be laid upon our author; but that virtue and vice, rewards and punishments, are confistent with a necessity of this fort. Thus, for inftance, the great Calvin reasons in the following manner. "Seeing we have often men-" tioned the diffinction betwixt neceffity and con-" ftraint, upon which this whole controverly " turns, we must now explain it a little more " accurately. They who defend free will, in " opposition to divine grace, maintain, that there " can be neither virtue nor vice where there is " neceffity. " neceffity. We answer, That God is neceffa-" rily good; and that his goodness, though ne-" ceffary, is not upon that account the lefs wor-" thy of praife. Again, that the devil is necef-" farily wicked ; and yet his wickedness is not " the lefs criminal. Nor is this any invention " of ours; for in the fame manner St Augustine " and St Bernard reafon.----Our adverfaries in-" fift, That what is voluntary, cannot at the " fame time be neceffary. We fhew them, that " both these qualities are found in the goodness " of God. They pretend it to be abfurd, that " men should be blamed for actions they must " unavoidably perform. By the inftance above " given, we fhow, that there is in this no abfur-" dity .---- They object again, That unless virtue " and vice proceed from a free choice, accor-" ding to their fenfe of freedom, there can be " no reason either for inflicting punishments, or " bestowing rewards. As to punishments, I an-" fwer, That they are justly inflicted on those " who commit evil; becaufe it makes no dif-" ference, whether their choice was free, i.e. " arbitrary, or whether they were under the in-" fluence of bad motives; provided only they " were voluntary in their guilt.----As to re-" wards, there is certainly no abfurdity in our " faying, that these are bestowed rather accor-" ding to the goodness of God, than the merit " of men." Calvin. tractat. theolog. p. 152. edit. Amstelod. 1667.

THE

١

١

THE learned Francis Turrettine, Professor in Geneva, whole authority as an orthodox divine will be allowed to be of the greatest weight, examines this question fully in his Institut. theolog. under the head de libero arbitrio, vol. 1. p. 728. to 737. and maintains the fame doctrine with our author. He reprefents it as the capital and fundamental herefy of the Pelagians and Arminians, that they hold liberty to confift in indifference, not in spontaneity; and that they maintain every kind of neceffity to be inconfiftent with liberty. With great accuracy and frength of reason, he confiders the several kinds of neceffity. He shews, that two of them, coaction, and physical necessity arising from the laws of matter, are destructive of liberty. But that rational or moral neceffity, which arifes from the conflitution of the mind as necessarily determined by motives, and the neceffity which arifes from the divine decree, are perfectly confiftent with liberty in its orthodox fenfe. He removes the objection against this doctrine, of its making man a mere machine; and, much in the fame manner with our author, shows, that upon the Arminian liberty of indifference, or an arbitrary power of counteracting all motives, man would be a most irrational and unaccountable being, to whom argument and reafoning, precept and command, would be addressed in vain. The following are his words, (p. 566. vol. 1.), " There are " only two kinds of neceffity which are incon-" fiftent

R

167

" fiftent with liberty; phyfical neceffity, and the " neceffity of constraint. The other kinds of " neceffity, which arife either from the decree " or influence of God, or from the object itfelf, " and the last judgment of the understanding, " are fo far from overthrowing liberty, that they " rather establish it; because they do not con-" strain the will, but persuade it; and produce " a voluntary choice in one that was before un-" willing. For whatever a man does according " to his inclination, with judgment and under-" standing, and with the full confent of his will, " it is impossible but he must do freely, al-" though, in another fense, he does it necessari-" ly. This holds, from whatever quarter we " fuppole the necessity laid upon him to arife; " whether it be from the existence of the thing " itfelf, or from the motive effectually determi-" ning his will, or from the decree and con-" courfe of the first caufe."

١

BENEDICT PICTET, Turrettine's fucceffor in the chair of Geneva, and acknowledged in the univerfities of this country as an author of the foundeft principles, eftabliftes the fame doctrine in fo clear a manner, as that words cannot be more precife and exprefs. "Before we difcourfe " of free will, we muft explain the meaning of " the term. By free will we underftand no-" thing elfe, but a power of doing what we " pleafe, with judgment and underftanding, " without •

j j

٤

ŀ

ĸ

1

1

I,

g

" without any external compulsion. To this " free will two things are opposed. First, phy-" fical or natural necessity; fuch as we fee in " inanimate beings; for instance, the necessity " by which fire burns. Next, the necessity of " constraint; which arises from external vio-" lence, imposed against the inclination of him " who fuffers it; as when a man is hurried to " prifon, or to an idol-temple. But we must " not oppose to free will that necessity of de-" pendence on God which all creatures lie un-" der, and from which no rational being can be " exempted; nor that rational necessity which " arises from the last judgment of the under-" ftanding; as when I neceffarily chufe that " which appears to me beft; for my choice, " though necessary, is notwithstanding free. " Wherefore, all that is requisite to freedom is, " that one should act spontaneously, and with " understanding: which clearly follows from " this, that God is the freeft of all beings, and " yet he is necessarily determined to good. The " fame holds of faints and angels. Liberty there-" fore does not confift in indifference : for if fo, " God would not be a free being; and the more " man was determined to good, or the more " perfect he was, the lefs liberty he would en-" joy; which is abfurd. This is further con-" firmed by the following reafoning. We all " chufe what appears to us our chief good or " happinels with entire liberty: for who is not " hearty Р

### 170 LIBERTY AND NECESSITY.

" hearty and voluntary in fuch choice? Yet to " this choice we are determined by a firong and " irrefultible neceffity: for no man has any free-" dom of indifference in this cafe. No man " can with himfelf miferable, or can chufe evil " as fuch. Liberty therefore by no means con-" fifts in indifference." Theolog. Chrift. 1. 4. cap. 6. § 4.

Or the modern Calvinist writers who agree with our author, we shall give one example, viz. the Reverend Mr Jonathan Edwards minister of Stockbridge in New England, in his late treatife, intitled, A careful and strict inquiry into the modern prevailing notions of that freedom of will which is supposed to be effential to moral agency, virtue and vice, reward and punishment, praise and blame. Published at Boston 1754. The piety and orthodoxy of this author, it is prefumed, none but Arminians will adventure to call in question. Nothing can be better calculated than this book to answer all the objections against our author's doctrine of moral necessity. to fhew its confiftency with reafon and fcripture. and the injuffice of afcribing to it any bad tendency. To quote particular passages is unneceffary; for the whole book, from beginning to end, is one continued chain of argumentation in favour of this doctrine. He every where holds and maintains, " That the will is in every cafe neceffarily determined by the ftrongeft mo-" tives.

١

2

ý

¢,

4

8

i |

" tives, and that this moral necessity (p. 24.) " may be as abfolute as natural neceffity; that " is, that a moral effect may be as perfectly " connected with its moral caufe, as a naturally " necessary effect is with its natural cause." For, fays he, (p. 22.), "The difference be-" tween these two does not lie fo much in the " nature of the connection, as in the two terms " connected." He rejects the notion of liberty, as implying any *felf-determining* power in the will, any indifference or contingency, p. 29.; and shews in several chapters, p. 135.-192. that those notions of liberty which the Arminians hold, are fo far from being neceffary to accountableness, to virtue or vice, to praise or blame, that, on the contrary, they are inconfistent with virtue, which must always suppose the determining power of motives.

HE examines the passages of fcripture which relate to this doctrine. He shews, that the acts of the will of the human foul of Chrift were neceffarily hely, yet virtuous, praife-worthy, and rewardable. He answers the objection to this doctrine, of its making God the author of fin. exactly in the fame way with our author, by diffinguishing between the intention of God and the intention of the finner. Though no man, who either knows the character of this author, or peruses his book, can entertain the least doubt of his zeal for religion; yet it appears, P 2 that that in New England, as well as elfewhere, the worthieft perfons are liable to be calumniated and traduced. For Mr Edwards, when concluding his book, observes, (p. 285.), "It is not " unlikely that fome who value themfelves on " the fuppofed rational principles of modern " fashionable divinity, will have their indigna-" tion raifed at the subject of this discourse, and " will renew the ufual exclamations about the " fate of the Heathens, Hobbes's necessity. " and making men mere machines; accumu-" lating the terrible epithets of fatal, inevitable, " irrefiftible, and it may be with the addition of " horrid and bla/phemous; and perhaps much " fkill may be used to fet the things which have " been faid in colours which fhall be flocking to " the imagination, and moving to the paffions of " those who have either too little capacity, or " too much confidence of the opinions they have " imbibed, and contempt of the contrary, to " try the matter by any ferious and circumfpect " examination; or fome particular things may " be picked out, which they think will found " harshest in the ears of the generality; and " thefe may be gloffed and defcanted on with " tart and contemptuous words, and from " thence the whole treated with triumph and " infult." How unbecoming and indecent fuch methods are, and how unlike the conduct of a fair and impartial inquirer after truth, the Reverend author fully shews; nor can I entertain

١

tain any doubt that my readers will join with him in condemning fuch a fpirit.

l

Ľ

ŗ,

p.

į.

1

į,

7

ŝ,

á

đ

P,

i

â

)

ł

٤.

To relieve myfelf a little from the languid uniformity of a continued defence, I will upon this fingle occafion change hands, and try my fortune in making an attack. Let us approach a little nearer to this liberty of indifference, which in late times has become fo mighty a favourite, even with fome who would be thought Calvinists, and let us examine whether it will ftand a narrow inspection. I am not without hopes, that upon a cool furvey it will be found a favourite not worthy to be contended for. Liberty of indifference in chusing betwixt two things of equal importance, is abundantly palatable, and may pass without objection. But liberty of indifference is not confined to cafes of this nature. It is afferted of man, that he has a power to will and act, without having any reafon or motive whatever to influence his will. A thing still more extraordinary is afferted with equal assurance, that man has a power to will and act, not only without motives, but in direct contradiction to the ftrongest motives that can influence the mind. It might well be urged, that this doctrine is a bold attack upon the common fense of mankind; and not the lefs bold that it is taken for granted, without the least evidence, or fo much as a fingle experiment to fupport it. Such a being there may poffibly be as is

is deferibed; but every man who has not a caufe to defend, will bear witnefs that this is not his cafe. I venture to affirm, that when the proper questions are put to any plain man who is ignorant of the controversy, his answers to every one of them will be repugnant to liberty of indifference as above explained. But waving this confideration at prefent, my attack shall be made from a different quarter, by examining the confequences of fuch a power, fuppoling it, for argument's fake, to be inherent in man. In the effay upon liberty and neceffity, it is inculcated at full length, that man endued with this power would be an absurd and unaccountable being. He could not be relied on. Oaths and engagements would be but brittle ties, and therefore he would be quite unqualified for the focial life. I add, that this power, which is imagined to exift in man in order to bestow on him the greater felf-command, has in reality the contrary effect. At the inflant perhaps of willing or acting, man, upon this supposition, must have a fway over himself, altogether arbitrary : but then he has no antecedent authority. He himfelf, even when the inftant of execution approaches, cannot fay what will be his determination, how he will chuse, or how he will act. It is evident from the very nature of the thing, that even the Deity can have no forefight here, when, by the fuppolition, the man's will is altogether arbitrary. and

### APPENDIX. 175

and is quite independent of all connections internal or external.

I MAKE a fecond attack, different from the former. I confider man as acting in the great theatre of the world, in which all things are governed by the providence of an almighty Being, As it appears to me, the directing influence of providence is altogether excluded from human actions, by this supposed liberty of indifference. The operations of matter are governed by fleady. laws, and thereby contribute unerringly to the great defigns of providence. But to what rule can the actions of men be fubiected, which are supposed to be altogether arbitrary, and under no manner of control? They cannot be under the direction of the Deity; for that fupposition effectually annihilates the liberty of indifference. The influence of the Deity must be superior to all other motives in determining the will; and confequently must have the effect to make man a neceffary agent in the fenfe of moral neceffity. Man then, by this fuppofed power, is withdrawn from under the government of providence, and left at large to the most bizarre and most absurd course of action, independent of motives from good or evil, independent of reason, and independent of every view, purpofe, or end. Here is chance clearly introduced in its most ugly form, fo far as human actions can have an influence. This difplays a difmal fcene, fufficient to

### 176 LIBERTY AND NECESSITY.

to raife horror in every one who has feeling. After this, let not the Arminians cry out againft blind fatality : A very uncomfortable doctrine to be fure. But is blind fatality worfe than blind chance? Could I poffibly be convinced of either, I fhould dread falling into defpair, and being led to deny the being of a God.

BUT enough of this difmal scene. I proceed to follow out a thought occasionally thrown out above, viz. that liberty of indifference is an imaginary scheme, unsupported by any facts in human nature, and which no man was ever confcious of. This leads me to fay and believe. that it never was embraced ferioufly in its true import by any man; not even by the most zealous Arminian. Those who espouse this doctrine, do certainly take up with words, neglecting to examine things as they truly are: for what man of plain fense ever imagined, that he can incline, that he can chuse, that he can resolve and will, without being prompted by any confideration, good or bad, and without having any end or purpose in view ? When a man acts, it is expected that he can fay, what moves him. If he can give no account, every one confiders him as a changeling or madman. As a confequence from this, I venture further to fay, that the doctrine of moral necessity is that which is univerfally embraced by men of plain fenfe, whofe minds are not warped by the tenets of a fect. This

This doctrine, I fay, is univerfally embraced; though not carried its utmost length, nor feen in its full extent, except, perhaps, by the studious and contemplative. With regard to acting, every man indeed conceives himfelf to be free; because he is confcious that he acts voluntarily, and according to his own choice. He is however at the fame time confeious, that he has not the power of chusing or willing arbitrarily or indifferently. As to his inclinations, withes, and defires, he is fenfible that thefe are not under his arbitrary power. And if this be once admitted, the chain of moral necessity is established. For no plain man, at the time of the action, entertains the least doubt, that his will is influenced by inclinations, withes, and defires ; which puts a final end to the liberty of indifference.

In the foregoing light to me appears unavoidably the celebrated doctrine of liberty of indifference: and when fuch is my cafe, I can as little avoid, after the cooleft reflection, thinking that the author of the effays has done well in contributing his endeavour to banish the Arminian doctrine out of our church. It is my ferious opinion, that to embrace it with all its neceffary confequences, is in effect introducing into this world, blind chance, confusion, and anarchy; which are the high road to Atheism. Far be it from my thoughts, at the fame time, to

### 178 LIBERTY AND NECESSITY.

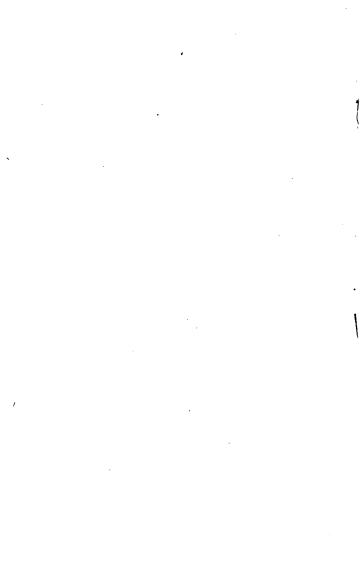
to accuse Arminians of Atheism, or of irreligion in any degree. I am fenfible, that the Arminian doctrine has been and is espoufed by many good and pious men. But this I must take the liberty to affirm, that these men stop short at the threshold, without pushing their way forward to behold the ugly appearances within doors. These appearances are now laid open to them. If the doctrine can be moulded into fome new shape, to make it fquare with religion and morality, fuch improvement must be agreeable to every welldisposed mind, because of the comfort it will afford to those who adhere to liberty of indifference. But, without pretending to the gift of prophecy, I venture to foretel, that it will be extremely difficult to flop any where fhort of moral necessity; and that any folid reformation of the Arminian doctrine, must infallibly lead to the principles of Calvin, and of our other reformers.

#### ESSAYS

E S S A Y S ON THE P R I N C I P L E S OF M O R A L I T Y A N D NATURAL RELIGION.

# PART II.

Digitized by Google



# ESSAY I.

# Of BELIEF.

ELIEF is a term fo familiar, as to have D escaped the inquiry of all philosophers, except the author of the treatife of human nature. And yet the fubject is by no means rendered fo plain by that author, as not still to admit doubts and difficulties. He hath made two propositions fufficiently evident: 1. That belief is not any separate action or perception of the mind, but only a certain manner of conceiving propolitions. 2. That it does not accompany every one of our conceptions. A man, in some circumstances, fees objects double; but he doth not believe them to be double. He can form the idea of a golden mountain; he can form the idea of it. as of a certain fize, and as existing in a certain place: but he doth not believe it to be exifting.

HAVING proved that belief is not a feparate perception, but only a certain manner of conception, our author goes on to explain what he means by this certain manner of conception. And his doctrine is, That belief making no alteration upon the idea, as to its parts and composition, must confist in the lively manner of con-Q ceiving

ceiving the idea; and that, in reality, a lively idea and belief are the fame. Whatever opinion I may have of this author's acuteness and penetration, neither his nor any man's authority shall prevail with me to embrace fuch a doctrine. For, at this rate, credulity and a lively imagination would be always connected; which doth not hold in fact. Poetry and painting produce lively ideas, but they feldom produce belief. For my part, I have no difficulty to form as lively a conception of Cæfar's dying in his bed, defcanting upon the vanity of ambition, or dictating rules of government to his fucceffor, as of his being put to death in the fenate-house. Nothing is told with more vivacity, than the death of Cyrus, in a pitched battle with the Queen of the Scythians; who dipped his head, as we are told, in a veffel full of blood; faying, " Satiate " thyfelf with blood, of which thou wast ever " thirfty." Yet, upon comparing circumstances and authors, the more probable opinion is, that Cyrus died in his bed.

•

١

IT may be obferved, at the fame time, that the conclusion is very lame which this author draws from his premisses. Belief makes no alteration upon the idea, as to its parts and composition. It can only therefore confist in a modification of the idea. But does it follow, that it confists in a lively conception of the idea, which is

182

is but one of many modifications? There is not here the shadow of an inference.

OUR author indeed urges, that true hiftory takes faft hold of the mind, and prefents its objects in a more lively manner than any fabulous narration can do. Every man muft judge for himfelf. I cannot admit this to be my cafe. Hiftory, no doubt, takes fafter hold of the mind, than any fiction told in the plain hiftorical ftyle. But can any man doubt, who has not an hypothefis to defend, that poetry makes a ftronger impreffion than hiftory? Let a man, if he hath any feeling, attend the celebrated Garrick in the character of Richard, or in that of King Lear; and he will find, that dramatic reprefentations make ftrong and lively impreffions, which hiftory feldom comes up to.

hy he he d

¥0

ati d

aR ·

ĸ

đ

i

ĩ

đ 1

ŀ

,

i,

ż

BUT now, if it shall be fupposed, that history prefents its objects in a more lively manner than can be done by dramatic or epic poetry; it will not therefore follow, that a lively idea is the fame with belief. I read a passing in Virgil: let it be the episode of Nifus and Euryalus. I read a passing in Livy, *fciz.* the facking of Rome by the Gauls. If I have a more lively idea of the latter story, I put it to my author, to point out the cause of this effect. He furely will not affirm, that it is the force of expression, or harmony of numbers: for, in these particulars, the Q 2 historian

183

historian cannot be compared to the poet. It is evident, that no other fatisfactory account of the matter can be given, but this, that Livy's fuperior influence upon the imagination, is the effect of his being confidered as a true historian. The most then that our author can make of his observation, supposing it to hold true in fact, is, that the authority of the historian produceth belief, and that belief produceth a more lively idea than any fabulous narration can do. The truth of the matter is, that belief, and a lively conception, are really two diffinct modifications of the idea; which, though often conjoined, are not only separable in the imagination, but in fact are often separated. Truth indeed bestows a certain degree of vivacity upon our ideas. At the fame time, I cannot admit, that hiftory exceeds dramatic or epic poetry, in conveying a lively conception of facts; becaufe it appears evident, that, in works of imagination, the want of truth is more than compensated by fentiment and language.

۱

SOMETIMES, indeed, belief is the refult of a lively imprefion. A dramatic reprefentation is one inftance, when it affects us fo much as to draw off the attention from every other object, and even from ourfelves. In this condition, we do not confider the actor, but conceive him to be the very man whofe character he affumes. We have that very man before our eyes. We perceive

### OF BELIEF.

ceive him as exifting and acting, and believe him to be exifting and acting. This belief, however, is but momentary. It vanisheth like a dream, so foon as we are roused by any trivial circumstance, to a confciousness of ourselves, and of the place we are in. Nor is the lively impression, even in this case, the cause of belief, but only the occasion of it, by diverting the attention of the mind from itself and its situation. It is in some such manner, that the idea of a spectre in the dark, which fills the mind, and diverts it from itself, is, by the force of imagination, converted into a reality. We think we fee and hear it : we are convinced of it, and believe the matter to be so.

REJECTING therefore this author's opinion, the real truth appears to be this. There is a certain peculiar manner of perceiving objects, and conceiving propolitions, which being altogether simple, cannot be described, but is expreffed by the word belief. The caufes of this modification, termed belief, are the authority of my own fenfes, and the authority of others, who either relate facts upon the authority of their fenses, or what they have heard at second or third hand. So that belief, mediately or immediatcly, is founded upon the authority of our fenses. We are so constituted by nature, as to put truft in our senses. Nor, in general, is it in our power to difbelieve our fenses; they have authority Q 3

185

authority with us irrefiftible. There is but one exception that I can think of. Finding, by experience, that we have been fometimes led into an error, by truffing fome particular perceptions, the remembrance of thefe inflances counterbalances the authority of our perception in the like cafes, and either keeps the mind fuspended, or perhaps makes it reft in a conviction that the perception is erroneous.

١

l

WITH regard to the evidence of my own fenfes, though I cannot admit, that the effence of belief confifts in the vivacity of the imprefion, I fo far agree with our author, that vivacity and belief, in this cafe, are always conjoined. A mountain I have once feen, I believe to be exifting, though I am a thoufand miles from it; and the image or idea I have of that mountain, is more lively and more diffinct, than of any I can form merely by the force of imagination. But this is far from being the cafe, as above obferved, of ideas raifed in my mind by the force of language.

BELIEF arifing from the evidence of others, refls upon a different foundation. Veracity, and a diffeofition to believe, are corresponding principles in the nature of man; and, in the main, these principles are so adjusted, that men are not often deceived. The diffeofition we have to believe, is qualified by the opinion we have of

186

of the witnefs, and the nature of the ftory he relates. But fuppofing a concurrence of all other circumfances to prompt our belief, yet if the fpeaker pretend only to amufe, without confining himfelf to truth, his narration will not, in the fmalleft degree, prompt our belief, let him enliven it with the ftrongeft colours that poetry is mafter of.

0

2

W.

x

0ï.

ar

Å

1

el i

17 17

C

ij

J

1

:1

I SHALL only add, that though our own fenfes, and the testimony of others, are the proper causes of belief ; yet that these causes are more or lefs efficacious, according to our prefent temper of mind. Hope and fear are influenced by passion, fo is belief. Hope and fear are modifications of our conception of future events. If the event be agreeable, and the probability of its existence be great, our conception of its existence takes on a modification which is called hope. If the event be extremely agreeable, and the probability of its existing do greatly preponderate, our hope is increafed proportionally, and fometimes is converted into a firm belief, that it will really hap-Upon weak minds, the delightfulnefs of pen. the expected event will, of itfelf, have that effect. The imagination, fired with the profpect, augments the probability, till it convert it to a firm perfuasion or belief. On the other hand, if fear get the afcendant, by a conceived improbability

probability of the existence of the event, the mind defponds, and fear is converted into a firm belief that the event will not happen. The operations of the mind are quite fimilar, where the event in view is difagreeable.

### ESSAY

# E S S A Y II.

# Of the IDEA of SELF, and of PERSO-NAL IDENTITY.

A D we no original impressions but those of the external fenses, according to the author of the treatise of human nature, we never could have any confciousness of felf; because such confciousness cannot arise from any external object. Mankind would be in a perpetual reverie; ideas would be constantly floating in the mind; and no man be able to connect his ideas with him/elf. Neither would there be any idea of perfonal identity. For a man cannot consider himself to be the same perfon, in different circumstances, when he hath no idea nor confciousness of himself at all.

BEINGS there may be who are thus conflituted: but man is none of thefe beings. It is an undoubted truth, that he hath an original perception or confcioufnefs of himfelf, and of his existence; which, for the most part, accompanies every one of his perceptions and ideas, and every action of his mind and body. I fay, for the most part; for the faculty or internal fense which is the cause of this peculiar perception,

### 190 IDEA OF SELF AND

perception, is not always in action. In a dead fleep we have no confcioufnefs of felf. We dream fometimes without this confcioufnefs; and even fome of our waking minutes pafs without it. A reverie is nothing elfe, but a wandering of the mind through its ideas, without carrying along the perception of felf.

THIS confcioufnefs or perception of felf is of the livelieft kind. Self-prefervation is every one's peculiar duty; and the vivacity of this perception is neceffary to make us attentive to our own intereft, and particularly to fhun every appearance of danger. When a man is in a reverie, he has no circumfpection, nor any manner of attention to himfelf.

It is remarkable, that one hath fcarce any chance to fall afleep, till this perception vanifh. Its vivacity keeps the mind in a certain degree of agitation, which bars fleep. A fall of water difpofes to fleep. It fixes the attention, both by found and fight, and, without creating much agitation, occupies the mind, fo as to make it forget itfelf. Reading of fome books hath the fame effect.

Ł

It is this perception or confcioufnefs of felf, carried through all the different ftages of life, and all the variety of action, which is the foundation of *perfonal identity*. It is by means of this

## PERSONAL IDENTITY. 191

this perception, that I confider myfelf to be the fame perfon, in all varieties of fortune, and in every change of life.

THE main purpose of this short essay, is to introduce an observation, that it is not by any argument or reasoning I conclude myself to be the fame perfon I was ten years ago. This conclusion refts entirely upon the perception of identity, which accompanies me through all my changes, and which is the only connecting principle that binds together all the various thoughts and actions of my life. Far lefs is it by any argument, or chain of reasoning, that I discover my own existence. It would be strange indeed, if every man's existence were kept a fecret from him, till the celebrated argument was invented, that cogito ergo fum. And if a fact that to common understanding appears felf-evident, is not to be relied on without an argument ; why should I take for granted, without an argument, that I think, more than that I exift? For furcly I am not more confcious of thinking than of exifting.

5

UP on this fubject I shall just fuggest a thought, which will be more fully infisted on afterwards; that any doctrine which leads to a distruct of our senses, must land in universal fcepticisfm.

# 192 PERSONAL IDENTITY.

fcepticism. If natural perceptions, whether from internal or external fenses, are not admitted as evidence of truth, I cannot see, that we can be certain of any fact whatever. It is clear, from what is now observed, that, upon this sceptical system, we cannot be certain even of our own existence.

#### ESSAY

# ESSAY III.

## Of the Authority of our Senses.

N feveral inftances things appear to us diffe-I rent from what they truly are; and fo far our fenses may be termed delusive. These instances are of two forts. One is, when the deception is occasioned by indisposition of the organ, remotenels of place, groffnels of the medium, or the like; which diffort the appearance of objects, and make them be feen double, or greater or lefs than they really are. In fuch instances, the perception is always faint, obfcure, or confused : and they no way invalidate the authority of the fenfes, in general, when, abstracting from such accidental obstructions, the perception is lively, ftrong, and diffinct. In the other fort, there is a deception established by the laws of nature; as in the cafe of fecondary qualities, taken notice of in the effay upon liberty and necessity; whence it was inferred. that nature does not always give us fuch correct perceptions as correspond to the philosophic truth of things. These exceptions notwithstanding, the testimony of our fenses still remains a fufficient ground of confidence and truft. For, in all these cases, where there is this fort of established deception, nature furnishes means for R coming

1

coming at the truth. In the foregoing inftance of fecondary qualities, philosophy eafily corrects the falle appearances, and teacheth us, that they are to be confidered as impressions made upon the mind, and not as qualities of the object. A remedy being thus provided to the deception, our belief, fo far as it can be influenced by reafon, is the more confirmed, with regard to our other perceptions, where there is no appearance of illufion. But this is not the whole of the matter. When any fenfe prefents to our view an appearance that may be called deceitful, we plainly discover some useful purpose intended. The deceit is not the effect of an imperfect or arbitrary constitution; but wifely contrived, to give us fuch notice of things as may belt fuit the purpoles of life. From this very confideration, we are the more confirmed in the veracity of nature. Singular inftances, in which our fenses are accommodated to the uses of life, rather than to the strictness of truth, are rational exceptions, which ferve the more firmly to efablish the general rule. And, indeed, when we have nothing but our fenfes to direct our conduct with regard to external objects, it would be strange, if there should be any just ground for a general distrust of them. But there is no fuch thing. There is nothing to which all mankind are more necessarily determined, than to put confidence in their senses. We entertain no doubt

doubt of their authority, because we are so conflituted, that it is not in our power to doubt.

WHEN the authority of our fenfes is thus founded on the necessity of our nature, and confirmed by conftant experience, it cannot but appear firange, that it fhould come into the thought of any man to call it in question. But the influence of novelty is great; and when a man of a bold genius, in spite of common sense, will strike out new paths to himself, it is not easy to forefee, how far his airy metaphysical notions may carry him. A late author, who gives us a treatife concerning the principles of human knowledge, by denying the reality of external objects, strikes at the root of the authority of our fenfes, and thereby paves the way to the most inveterate scepticism. For what reliance can we have upon our fenfes, if they deceive us in a point fo material? If we can be prevailed upon to doubt of the reality of external objects, the next step will be, to doubt of what passes in our own minds, of the reality of our ideas and perceptions; for we have not a ftronger confciousness, nor a clearer conviction of the one, than of the other. And the last step will be, to doubt of our own existence; for it is shown in the effay immediately foregoing, that we have no certainty of this fact, but what depends upon fenfe and feeling.

ł

1

5

R 2

Digitized by Google

195

### 196 AUTHORITY OF

IT is reported, that Dr Berkeley, the author of he above-mentioned treatife, was moved to adopt this whimfical opinion, to get free from fome arguments urged by materialists against the existence of the Deity. If so, unhappy has been the experiment : for this doctrine, if it should not lead to universal scepticism, affords, at least, a fhrewd argument in favour of Atheifm. If I can only be confcious of what passes in my own mind, and if I cannot trust my fenses when they give me notice of external and independent existences; it follows, that I am the only being in the world; at least, that I can have no evidence from my fenfes, of any other being, body or fpirit. This is certainly an unwary concession; because it deprives us of our chief or only means for attaining knowledge of the Deity. Laying afide fense and feeling, this learned divine will find it a difficult talk, to point out by what other means we discover the foregoing important truth. But of this more afterwards.

WERE there nothing elfe in view, but to eftablish the reality of external objects, it would be fearce worth while to bestow much thought, in folving metaphysical paradoxes against their existence, which are better confuted by common fense and experience. But as the foregoing doctrine appears to have very extensive confequences, and to strike at the root of the most valuable branches of human knowledge; an attempt temp by d have not at an purpo exter wher to us

I)

whice per to of the object hence anfw urged

TH of div of H Some ing a derive extern table, ing as r From tion tempt to re-eftablifh the authority of our fenfes, by detecting the fallacy of the arguments that have been urged against it, may, it is hoped, not be unacceptable to the public. The attempt, at any rate, is neceffary in this work; the main purpose of which is, to show, that our fenses, external and internal, are the true sources from whence the knowledge of the Deity is derived to us.

IN order to afford fatisfaction upon a fubject which is eafier felt than expressed, it will be proper to give a distinct analysis of the operations of those fenses by which we perceive external objects. And if this be once clearly apprehended, it will not be a matter of difficulty, to answer the feveral objections which have been urged against their existence.

THE perceptions of the external fenfes are of different kinds. Some we have at the organs of fenfe, fuch as fmelling, tafting, touching. Some we have as from a diffance, fuch as hearing and feeing. From the fenfe of touching are derived the perceptions of body, folidity and external exiftence. Laying my hand upon this table, I perceive a thing fmooth and hard, preffing upon my hand, and which is perceived as more diffant from me than my hand is. From fight we have the perceptions of motion and of colour; and from fight as well as R 3 from from touch, those of extension and figure. But it is more material to observe, upon the present subject, that from fight as well as touch, we have the perception of things as having an independent and continued or permanent existence.

LET us endeavour to explain this circumftance of independency and permanent existence of the objects of fight and touch; for it is a cardinal point. To begin with objects of fight : I cast my eye upon a tree, and perceive colour, figure, extension, and fometimes motion. If this be a complete analysis of the perception. substance is not discoverable by fight. But upon attentively examining this perception, to try if there be any thing more in it, I find one circumftance omitted, that the foregoing particulars are not perceived as fo many separate existences, having no relation to each other, but as clofely united and connected. When looking around on different objects, I perceive colour in one quarter, motion in a second, and extenfion in a third; the appearances thefe make in my mind are in nothing fimilar to the impreffion made by a tree, where the extension, motion, and other qualities, are introduced into the mind as intimately united and connected. But in what manner are they united and connected ? Of this every perfon can give an account ; that they are perceived as inhering in or belonging to fome *fubstance* or thing, of which they are qualities ;

qualities; and that, by their reference to this fubftance or thing, they are thus closely united and connected. Thus it is that the perception of *fubftance*, as well as of *qualities*, is derived from fight. And it is also to be attended to, as a part of the total perception, that as the qualities appear to belong to their fubftance, and to inhere in it, fo both the fubftance and its qualities, which we call the tree, are perceived as altogether independent of us, as really existing, and as having a permanent existence.

A SIMILAR imprefiion is made upon us by means of the fense of feeling. It is observed above, that, from the touch, we have the perceptions of body, folidity and external existence; and we have, from the fame fenfe, the perceptions of foftness and hardness, smoothness and roughnefs. Now, when I lay my hand upon this table, I have a perception, not only of fmoothnefs, hardnefs, figure, and extension, but alfo of a thing I call body, of which the particulars now mentioned are perceived as qualities. Smoothness, hardness, extension, and figure, are perceived, not as feparate and unconnected existences, but as inhering in and belonging to fomething I call body, which is really exifting, and which hath an independent and permanent existence. And it is this body, with its feveral qualities, which I express by the word table.

Тне

199

THE foregoing analysis of the perceptions of fight and touch, will be best illustrated by a comparison with the perceptions of the other fenses. I hear a found, or I feel a smell. These are not perceived as the qualities or properties of any body, thing, or substance. They make their appearance in the mind as simple existences; and do not suggest any perception of independency, or permanent existence. Did seeing and feeling carry us no farther, we never could have the least conception of substance.

IT is not a little furprising, that philosophers, who difcourfe fo currently of qualities, should affect so much doubt and hesitation about substance; feeing these are relative ideas, and imply each other. For what other reason do we call figure a quality, but that we perceive it, not as a separate existence, but as belonging to something that is figured; and which thing we call substance, because it is not a property of any other thing, but is a thing which fubfifts by itfelf, or hath an independent existence. Did we perceive figure as we perceive found, it would not be confidered as a quality. In a word, a quality is not intelligible, unlefs upon fuppofition of fome other thing, of which it is the quality. Sounds indeed, and fmells, are also confidered as qualities. But this proceeds from habit, not from original perception. For, having once acquired the distinction betwixt a thing and its qualities.

*lities*, and finding found and finell more to rerefemble *qualities* than *fubftances*, we readily come into the use of confidering them as qualities.

ANOTHER observation occurs with regard to those things which by the fight and touch are perceived as qualities; that we cannot form a conception of them, independent of the beings to which they belong. It is not in our power to separate, even in imagination, colour, figure, motion, and extension, from body or substance. There is no fuch thing as conceiving motion by itfelf, abstracted from some body which is in motion. Let us try ever fo often, our attempts will be in vain, to form an idea of a triangle independent of a body which has that figure. We cannot conceive a body that is not figured; and we can as little conceive a figure without a body ; for this would be to conceive a figure as having a separate existence, at the same time that we conceive it as having no feparate existence; or to conceive it, at once, to be a quality, and not a quality. Thus it comes out, that fubstance makes a part, not only of every perception of fight and touch, but of every conception we can form of colour, figure, extension, and motion. Taking in the whole train of out ideas, there is not one more familiar to us, than that of fub-(tance, a being or thing which hath qualities.

WHEN

Ì

WHEN these things are confidered, I cannot readily difcover what wrong conception of the matter hath made Locke talk fo obscurely and indiffinctly of the idea of fubftance. It is no wonder he should be difficulted to form an idea of fubstance in general, abstracted from all properties, when fuch abstraction is altogether beyond the reach of our conception. But there is nothing more eafy, than to form an idea of any particular substance with its properties; yet this has fome how escaped him. When he forms the idea of a horse or a stone, he admits nothing into the idea, but a collection of feveral fimple ideas of fenfible qualities \*. " And be-" caufe," fays he, " we cannot conceive how " these qualities should subsist alone, nor one in " another, we suppose them existing in and sup-" ported by fome common fubject, which fup-" port we denote by the name *[ub]tance*; though " it be certain we have no clear or diffinct idea " of that thing we suppose a support." A single question would have unfolded the whole mysterv. How comes it, that we cannot conceive qualities to fubfist alone, nor one in another? Locke himfelf must have given the following anfwer, That the thing is not conceivable ; because a property or quality cannot subfift without the thing to which it belongs; for if it did, that it would cease to be a property or quality. Why

\* Book 2. chap. 23.

then

then does he make fo faint an inference, as that we suppose qualities existing in and supported by fome common fubject? It is not a bare supposition : it is an effential part of the idea; it is neceffarily fuggested to us by fight and touch. He observes, that we have no clear nor distinct idea of substance. If he mean. that we have no clear nor diffinct idea of fubfance abstracted from properties, the thing is fo true, that we can form no idea of fubstance at all abstracted from properties. But it is also true, that we can form no idea of properties abstracted from substance. The ideas both of fubstance and of quality are perfectly in the fame condition in this respect; which it is surprifing philosophers should fo little attend to. At the fame time, we have clear and diffinct ideas of many things as they exist, though perhaps we have not a complete idea of any one thing. We have such ideas of things as serve to all the useful purposes of life. It is true, our senses reach not beyond the external properties of beings. We have no direct perception of the effence and internal properties of any thing. These we discover from the effects produced. But had we fenfes to perceive directly the effence and internal properties of things, our idea of them would indeed be more full and complete, but not more clear and distinct, than at present. For, even upon that fuppolition, we could form no notion of fubftance, but by its properties, internal

6

. [4

6

t

ternal and external. To form an idea of a thing abstracted from all its properties, is impossible.

THE following is the fum of what is above laid down. By fight and touch we have the perceptions of fubftance and body, as well as of qualities. It is not figure, extension, motion, that we perceive; but a thing figured, extended, and moving. As we cannot form an idea of fubftance abitracted from qualities, fo we cannot form an idea of qualities abstracted from fubftance. They are relative ideas, and imply each other. This is one point gained. Another is, that the idea of fubstance or body thus attained, comprehends in it independent and permanent existence; that is, fomething which exifts independent of our perceptions, and remainsthe fame, whether we perceive it or not.

In this manner are we made fensible of the real existence of things without us. The perception is fo strong, and the conviction, which makes a part of the perception, that sceptical arguments, however cunningly devised, may puzzle, but can never get the better: for such is our constitution, that we can entertain no doubt of the authority of our senses in this particular. At the fame time, every fort of experience confirms the truth of our perceptions. I fee a tree at a distance, of a certain shape and fize. Walking forward, I find it in its place, by the result.

٩

ance it makes to my body; and, fo far as I can difcover by touch, it is of the fame fhape and fize which my eye reprefents it to be. I return day after day, year after year, and find the fame object, with no other variation, but what the feafons and time produce. The tree is at laft cut down. It is no longer to be feen or felt.

To overthrow the authority of our fenfes, a few fingular inftances in which they appear fallacious, are of no weight. And to confirm this branch of the argument, we need but compare the evidence of our fenfes with the evidence of human testimony. The comparison cannot fail to afford fatisfaction. Veracity, and a disposition to rely upon human evidence, are correfponding principles, which greatly promote fociety. Among individuals, these principles are found to be of different degrees of strength. But, in the main, they are fo proportioned to each other, that men are not often deceived. In this cafe, it would be an inconclusive argument, that we ought not to give credit to any man's teftimony, because fome men are defective in the principle of veracity. The only effect fuch inftances have, or ought to have, is, to correct our propenfity to believe, and to bring on a habit of fufpending our belief, till circumftances be examined. The evidence of our fenfes rifes undoubtedly much higher than the evidence of human teftimony. And if we continue to put truft in the latter. S

# 206 AUTHORITY OF

latter, after many inflances of being deceived, we have better reafon to put truft in the former, were the inflances of being deceived equally numerous; which is plainly not the fact. When people are in found health of mind and body, they are very feldom mifled by their fenfes.

IF I have been to lucky as to put this fubject in its proper light, it will not be a difficult task to clear it of any doubts which may arife, upon perusing the above-mentioned treatife. The author boldly denies the existence of matter, and the reality of the objects of fense; contending, that there is nothing really existing without the mind of an intelligent being; in a word, redueing all to be a world of ideas. " It is an opi-" nion strangely prevailing among men," fays he, " that houses, mountains, rivers, and in a word " all fenfible objects, have an existence, natural " or real, diffinct from their being perceived by " the understanding." He ventures to call this a manifest contradiction; and his argument against the reality of these objects, is in the following words. " The forementioned objects " are things perceived by fenfe. We cannot " perceive any thing but our own ideas or per-" ceptions ; therefore what we call men, houfes, " mountains, &c. can be nothing else but ideas " or perceptions." This argument shall be examined afterwards, with the respect that is due to its author. It shall only be taken notice of by

٤

,

,

١.

8

i,

k

X

Ð

۵

e, ė

2

,

Ľ

r

ķ

ł

by the way, that, fuppoling mankind to be under so strange and unaccountable a delusion. as to mistake their ideas for men, houses, mountains, &c. it will not follow, that there is in this any manifest contradiction, or any contradiction For deception is a very different thing at all. from contradiction. But he falls from this high pretension, in the after part of his work, to argue more confistently, " that, fuppoling folid, " figured, and moveable fubstances, to exist " without the mind, yet we could never come " to the knowledge of this \*." Which is true, if our fenses bear no testimony of the fact. And he adds +, " that, supposing no bodies to exist " without the mind, we might have the very fame " reafons for fuppoling the existence of external " bodies that we have now." Which may be true, supposing our senses to be fallacious.

THE Doctor's fundamental proposition is, That we can perceive nothing but our own ideas or perceptions. This, at best, is an ambiguous expression. For taking perception in one fense, as signifying every object we perceive, it is a mere identical proposition, *fciz*. that we perceive nothing but what we perceive. But taking the Doctor's proposition as intended, that we can have no perception or confciousfues of any thing

> \* Sect. 18. † Sect. 20.

Digitized by Google

**but** 

### 208 AUTHORITY OF

but what exifts in our own minds, he had certainly no reason to take this affertion for granted : and yet he hath never once attempted a proof of it; though, in fo bold an undertaking as that of annihilating the whole universe, his own mind excepted, he had no reason to hope. that an affertion fo fingular, and fo contradictory to common fense and apprehension, would be taken upon his word. It may be true, that it is not easy to explain, nor even to comprehend, by what means we perceive external objects. But our ignorance is, in most cases, a very indifferent argument against matter of fact. At this rate, he may take upon him equally to deny the bulk of the operations in the material world, which have not hitherto been explained by him or others. And at bottom, it is perhaps as difficult to explain the manner of perceiving our own ideas, or the impressions made upon us, as to explain the manner of perceiving external objects. The Doctor, befides, ought to have confidered, that, by this bold doctrine, he, in effect, fets bounds to the power of nature, or of the Author of nature. If it was in the power of the Almighty to beflow upon man a faculty of perceiving external objects, he has certainly done it. For supposing the existence of external objects, we have no conception how they could be otherways manifested to us than in fact they are. Therefore the Doctor was in the right to affert, that a faculty in man to perceive external objects.

objects, would be a contradiction, and confequently a privilege not in the power of the Deity to beftow upon him. He perceived the neceffity of carrying his argument fo far; at the fame time, fenlible that this was not to be made out, he never once attempts to point at any thing like a contradiction. And if he cannot prove it to be a contradiction, the queftion is at an end: for fuppofing only the fact to be poffible, we have the very higheft evidence of its reality that our nature is capable of, not lefs than the teftimony of our fenfes.

;

5

!

r it

IT hath been urged in support of this doctrine, that nothing is prefent to the mind, but. the impressions made upon it; and that it cannot be confcious of any thing but what is prefent. This difficulty is eafily folved. For the propolition, " That we cannot be confcious of " any thing but what is prefent to the mind, or " passes within it," is taken for granted, as if it were felf-evident : and yet the direct contrary is an evident fact, feiz. that we are confcious of many things which are not prefent to the mind; that is, which are not, like perceptions and ideas, within the mind. Nor is there any manner of difficulty to conceive, that an impreffion may be made upon us by an external object, in such a manner as to raise a direct perception of the external object itfelf. When we attend to the operations of the external. S. 3, fenfes.

fenfes, we difcover that external objects make not imprefions all of them in the fame manner. In fome inftances we feel the imprefion, and are confcious of it, as an imprefion. In others, being quite unconfcious of the imprefion, we perceive only the external object. And to give full fatisfaction to the reader upon the prefent fubject, it may perhaps not be fruitlefs, briefly to run over the operations of the feveral external fenfes, by which the mind is made confcious of external objects, and of their properties.

AND, first, with regard to the fense of fmelling, which gives us no notice of external existences. Here the operation is of the fimplest kind. It is no more but an impression made at the organ, which is perceived as an impression. Experience, it is true, and habit, lead us to afcribe this particular impreffion to fome external thing as its caufe. Thus, when a particular impreffion is made upon us, ternied the fweet smell of a role, we learn to afcribe it to a role, becaufe that peculiar impreffion upon the organ of fmelling, is always found to accompany the fight and touch of the body called a role. But that this connection is the child of experience only, will be evident from the following confiderations; that when a new fmell is perceived, we are utterly at a lofs what caufe to afcribe it to; and that when a child feels a fmell, it is not led to afcribe it to any caufe whatever. In this cafe, there can be no. other other difficulty, but to comprehend in what manner the mind becomes confcious of an impreffion made upon the body. Upon which it feems fufficient to observe, that we are kept entirely. ignorant in what manner the foul and body are connected. But, from our ignorance of the manner of this connection, to deny the reality of external existences, reducing all to a world of ideas, is in reality not lefs whimfical, than if one, after admitting the reality of external existences, should go about to deny, that we have any perception of them; merely because we cannot fully account for the manner of this perception, nor how a material substance can communicate itself to the mind, which is spirit, and not matter. The fame observations may be applied to the fenfe of hearing; with this difference only, that a found is not perceived, at least not originally, as an impression made at the organ, but merely as an existence in the mind.

c

d

5

ï,

1

8

ļ

In the fenfes of taffing and touching, we are confcious not only of an imprefilon made at the organ, but alfo of a body which makes the imprefilon. When I lay my hand upon this table, the imprefilon is of a hard fmooth body, which refifts the motion of my hand. In this impreffion there is nothing to create the leaft fulficion of fallacy. The body acts where it is, and it acts merely by refiftance. There occurs not, therefore,

Digitized by Google

therefore, any difficulty in this cafe, other than that mentioned above, *fciz.* after what manner an imprefion made at an organ of the body, is communicated to, or perceived by the mind. We fhall only add upon this head, that touch alone, which is the leaft intricate of all our fenfes, is fufficient to overthrow the Doctor's whole pompous fystem. We have, from that fenfe, the fulleft and clearest perception of external existences that can be conceived, subject to no doubt, ambiguity, nor even cavil. And this perception must, at the fame time, support the authority of our other fenfes, when they give us notice of external existences.

1

WHAT remains to be examined, is the fenfe of feeing, which, it is prefumed, the Doctor had chiefly in view, when he argues against the reality of external existences. And, indeed, the operation of perceiving objects at a distance, is focurious, and fo fingular, that it is not furprifing a rigid philosopher should be puzzled about it. In this cafe, there is a difficulty, which applies with fome fnew of ftrength, and which poffibly has had weight with our author, though it is ne-ver once mentioned by him. It is, that no being can act but where it is; and that a body at a diffance cannot act upon the mind, more than the mind upon it. I candidly own, that this argument appears to evince the neceffity of fomeintermediate means in the act of vision. One means

means is fuggefted by matter of fact. The image of a vilible object is painted upon the retina of the eye. And it is not more difficult to conceive, that this image may be fome how conveyed to the mind, than to conceive the manner of its being painted upon the retina. This circumftance puts the operation of vilion, in one refpect, upon the fame footing with that of touching; both being performed by means of an imprefilon made at the organ. There is indeed this effential difference, that the imprefilon of touch is felt as fuch, whereas the imprefilon of fight is not felt : we are not confcious of any fuch imprefilon, but fingly of the object itfelf which makes the imprefilon.

AND here a curious piece of mechanism prefents itself to our view. Though an imprefiion is made upon the mind, by means of the image painted upon the retina, whereby the external object is perceived ; yet nature hath carefully concealed this impreffion from us, in order to remove all ambiguity, and to give us a diffinct perception of the object itfelf, and of that only. In touching and tafting, the impression made at the organ, is fo clofely connected with the body which makes the impression, that the perception 'of the impression, along with that of the body. creates no confusion nor ambiguity, the body being perceived as operating where it really is. But were the impreffion of a visible object perceived.

Digitized by Google

ceived, as made on the retina, which is the organ of fight, all objects behoved to be feen as within the eye. It is doubted among naturalifts, whether outnefs or diftance is at all difcoverable by fight, and whether that appearance be not the effect of experience. But bodies, and their operations, are fo clofely connected in place, that were we conficious of an organic imprefion at the retina, the mind would have a conftant propenfity to place the body there alfo; which would be a circumftance extremely perplexing in the act of vision, as fetting feeling and experience in perpetual opposition; enough to poison all the pleafure we enjoy by that noble fense.

In fo fhort-fighted a creature as man, it is the worft reafon in the world for denying any well-attefted fact, that he cannot account for the manner in which it is brought about. It is true, we cannot explain after what manner it is, that, by the intervention of the rays of light, the beings and things around us are laid open to our view : but it is great arrogance, to pretend to doubt of the fact upon that account ; for it is, in effect, maintaining, that there is nothing in nature but what we can explain.

THE perception of objects at a diftance, by intervention of rays of light, involves no inconfiftency nor impoffibility : and unlefs this could be afferted, we have no reason nor foundation to t

h

ş

i

r

¢,

5

{|

ļ

t

1

to call in question the authority of the perception. And after all, this particular step of the operation of vision, is, at bottom, not more difficult to be conceived, or accounted for, than the other steps, of which no man entertains a doubt. It is, perhaps, not easy to explain how the image of an external body is painted upon the retina tunica; and no perfon pretends to explain how this image is communicated to the mind. Why then should we hefitate about the last step, to wit, the perception of external objects, more than about the two former, when they are all equally supported by the most unexceptionable evidence ? The whole operation of vision far surpasses human knowledge; but not more than the operation of magnetism, electricity, and a thousand other natural appearances : and our ignorance of the cause, ought not to make us fuspect deceit in the one cafe, more than in the other.

WE shall conclude this subject with the following reflection. Whether our perception of the reality of external objects correspond to the truth of things, or whether it be a mere illusion, is a question, which, from the nature of the thing, cannot admit of a strict demonstration. One thing is certain, that supposing the reality of external objects, we can form no conception of their being displayed to us in a more lively and convincing manner, than in fact

### 216 AUTHORITY OF, &c.

fact is done. Why then call a thing in doubt, of which we have as good evidence as human nature is capable of receiving? But we cannot call it in doubt, otherways than in fpeculation, and even then but for a moment. We have a thorough conviction of the reality of external objects; it rifes to the higheft certainty of belief; and we act, in confequence of it, with the greateft fecurity of not being deceived. Nor are we in fact deceived. When we put the matter to a trial, every experiment anfwers to our perceptions, and confirms us more and more in our belief.

ESSAY

1

# E S S A Y IV.

# Of our IDEA of POWER.

ł

N

ŀ

u

THE subject proposed to be handled in the present esfay is the idea of power, and its This term is found in all languages : we origin. talk familiarly, of a power in one body to produce certain effects, and of a capacity in another body to have certain effects produced upon it. Yet authors have differed strangely about the foundation of these ideas; and, after all that has been faid, it feems yet to be a matter of uncertainty, whether they be fuggested by reason, by experience, or by what other means. This fubject deserves our attention the more, that the bulk of useful knowledge depends upon it. Without fome inlight into causes and their effects, we flould be a very impersect race of beings. And. with regard to the prefent undertaking, this fubject must not, at any rate, be overlooked ; becaufe from it, principally, is derived any knowledge we have of the Deity, as will afterwards be made evident.

POWER denotes a fimple idea, which, upon that account, cannot admit of a definition. But no perfon is, or can be at a lofs about the T meaning.

meaning. Every action we perceive, gives us a notion of power: for a productive caule is implied in our perception of every action or event \*; and the very idea of caufe comprehends a power of producing its effect. Let us only refiect upon the perception we have when we fee a frone thrown into the air out of one's hand. In the perception of this action are included contiguity of the hand and ftone, the motion of the perfon's hand with the ftone in it, and the feparate motion of the ftone following the other circumstances in point of time. The first circumftance is neceffary to put the man in a condition to exert his power upon the flone; the fecond is the actual exertion of the power : and the last is the effect produced by that exertion. But these circumstances, which include both contiguity and fucceffion, make no part of the idea of power; which is conceived as an inherent property fublifting in the man, not merely when he is exerting it, but even when he is at reft. That all men have this very idea, is a fact not to be controverted. The only doubt is, whence it is derived ; from what fource it fprings.

ī

THAT reafon cannot help us out, will be evident. For reafon muft always have fome object to employ itfelf upon. There muft be known *data* or principles, to lead us to the difcovery of

Digitized by Google

\* Effay of liberty and neceffity.

things

5

5

3

ł

ġ,

h

te

ñ

ż.

Ţ

ź

Ľ

ű,

加出的

1

1

E,

i i i 210

things which are connected with these data or principles. But with regard to power, which makes a necessary connection betwixt a cause and its effect, we have no data nor principles to lead us to the difcovery. We are not acquainted with the beings and things about us, otherways than by certain qualities and properties obvious to the external fenfes. Power is none of thefe; nor is there any connection which we can difcover betwixt power and any of thefe. In a word, we have not the least foundation for concluding power in any body, till it once exert its power. If it be urged, That the effects produced are data, from which we can infer a caufe by a process of reasoning, and confequent. ly a power in the caufe to produce thefe effects : I answer, That when a new thing or quality is produced, when in general any change is brought about, it is extremely doubtful, whether, by any process of reasoning, we can conclude it to be an effect, so as necessarily to require a cause of its existence. That we do conclude it to be an effect, is most certain. But that we can draw any fuch conclusion, merely from reason, I do not clearly fee. What leads me, I confeis, to this way of thinking, is, that men of the greatest genius have been unfuccelsful, in attempting to prove, that every thing which begins to exist, must have a cause of its existence. " Whatever " is produced (fays Locke) without any caufe, is " produced by nothing; or, in other words, " has Τ 2

" has nothing for its caufe. But nothing cars " never be a cause, no more than it can be " fomething." This is obvioufly begging the queftion. To affirm that nothing is the caufe, is taking for granted that a caufe is neceffary; which is the very point undertaken to be made cut. Dr Clarke's argument labours under the fame defect. " Every thing (he fays) must " have a caufe ; for if any thing wanted a caufe, " it would produce itfelf ; that is, exift before " it exifted; which is impoffible." If a thing can exist without a cause, there is no necessity it fhould produce itfelf, or that any thing fhould produce it. In fhort, there does not appear to me any contradiction in the proposition, That a thing may begin to exist without a cause: and therefore I dare not declare the fact to be impossible. But sense affords me a conviction. that nothing begins to exist without a cause, though reason cannot afford me a demonstration of it. This matter will be opened afterwards. At prefent, it is sufficient to observe, that the conviction in this cafe is complete, and carries fo much authority with it, as fcarce to admit a bare conception, that the thing can poffibly be other-This fubject, at the fame time, affords a wavs. new inftance of what we have had more than once occasion to observe. Fond of arguments drawn from the nature of things, we are too apt to apply fuch arguments without diferetion : and to call that demonstration, which, at bottom.

Ţ

22 Î

tom, is a conviction founded on fenfe merely. Our perceptions, which work filently, and without effort, are apt to be overlooked; and we vainly imagine, we can demonstrate every proposition which we perceive to be true.

1

¢

;

X

1

:,

ſť

Ę

i

ä

t

ł

ĺ.

ķ

ļ

۱

1

IT will be pretty obvious, that the idea of power is not deducible from experience, more than from reason. We can learn nothing from experience merely, but that two objects may have been constantly conjoined in time past, such as fire and heat, the fun and light. But, in the first place, all that can be gathered from such facts, comes far short of our idea of cause and effect, or of a power in one body to produce fome change in another. In the fecond place, experience, which relateth to the actions only of the particular bodies we are acquainted with, cannot aid us to difcover power in any body that we have not formerly seen in action. Yet. from the very first operation of such a body, we have the perception of caule and effect, which therefore cannot be from experience. And, in the last place, as experience in no cafe reaches to futurity, our idea of power, did it depend upon experience, could only look backward: with. regard to every new production, depending upon causes even the most familiar, we should be utterly at a loss to form any idea of power.

It being now evident, that our idea of power T 3 is

is not derived, either from reason or experience, we shall endeavour to trace out its true foundation. Running over the fubject, the following thoughts occur, which I shall fet before the reader in their natural order. As man, in his life and actions, is necessarily connected both with the animate and inanimate world ; he would be utterly at a loss to conduct himself, without fome acquaintance with the beings around him, and their operations. His external fenses give him all the intelligence that is necessary, not only for being, but for well-being. They discover to him, in the first place, the existence of external things. But this would not be fufficient, unlefs they alfo difcovered to him their powers and operations. The sense of seeing is the principal means of his intelligence. I have explained, in a former effay, that perception by which we difcover the existence of external objects. And when these are put in motion, whereby certain things follow, it is by another perception that we discover a relation betwixt certain objects, which makes one be termed the caufe, the other the effect. I need fearce repeat again, that fimple perceptions and ideas cannot otherways be explained than by fuggesting the terms which denote them. All that can be done in this cafe, is to request of the reader, to attend to what passes in his mind, when he fees one billiardball struck against another, or a tree which the svind is blowing down, or a ftone thrown into the air

j

ì

Digitized by Google

air out of one's hand. We are obvioufly fo confituted, as not only to perceive the one body acting, and exerting its power; but alfo to perceive, that the change in the other body is produced by *means* of that action or exertion of power. This change we perceive to be an *effect*; and we perceive a neceffary connection betwixt the action and the effect, fo as that the one muft unavoidably follow the other.

ĉ

Ľ.

n, R

٩

Ľ.

Ē

9

i

5. E,

ł

As I discover power in external objects by the eye, fo I discover power in my mind by an internal fense. By one act of the will, ideas are raised; by another act of the will, my limbs are put in motion. Attending to these operations, I perceive or feel the motion of my limbs, and the entry of ideas, to follow necessfarily from the act of the will. In other words, I perceive or feel these to be effects, and the act of the will to be the cause.

AND that this feeling is involved in the very perception of the action, without taking in either reafon or experience, may be illuftrated by fome plain obfervations. There is no relation more familiar, even to children, than that of caufe and effect. The first time a child lifts a bit of bread, the perception it hath of this action, not only includes a conjunction of the hand with the bread, and that the motion of the latter follows the motion of the former; but

but it likeways includes that particular circumfance which is expressed by a power in the hand to lift the bread. Accordingly, we find no expreffion more familiar among children and ruflics, nor better understood, than I can do this, I can do that. Further, as things are beft illustrated by their contraries, let us put the cafe, of a being, if there be fuch a one, who, in viewing external objects, hath no idea of fubstance, but only of qualities; and who, in viewing motion, doth not perceive the change produced by it to be an effect, or any way connected with the motion, further than as following it in point of time. It appears extremely evident, that this fuppofed being can never have the idea of body, nor of its powers. Reason or experience can never give it the idea of body or fubstance, and far lefs of their powers.

It is very true, we cannot difcover power in any object, as we difcover the object itfelf, merely by intuition. But the moment an alteration is produced by any object, we perceive that the object hath a power to produce that alteration; which leads to denominate the one a caufe, and the other an effect. I do not affert, that we can never be in a miftake about this matter. Children often err, by attributing an effect to one caufe inftead of another, or by confidering that to be a caufe which is not. Miftakes of this kind are corrected by experience. But

But they prove the reality of the perception of power, just as much as where our perceptions are agreeable to the truth of things.

AND with regard to the fallibility of the fenfe of feeing, when it points out to us caufes and effects, the comparison may be juftly inflituted betwixt it and belief. The faculty which regulates belief is not infallible : it fometimes leads us into errors. Neither is the faculty infallible, by which we differ one thing to be a caufe, another to be an effect. Yet both are exerted with fufficient certainty, to guide us through life, without many capital errors.

THE author of the treatile of human nature, has employed a world of reafoning, in fearching for the foundation of our idea of power, and of neceffary connection. And, after all his anxious refearches, he can make no more of it, but, "That the idea of neceffary connection, " alias power or energy, ariles from a number " of inftances, of one thing always following " another, which connects them in the imagi-" nation; whereby we can readily foretell the " existence of the one from the appearance of " the other." And he pronounces, " That " this connection can never be fuggested from " any one of these instances, furveyed in all " possible lights and positions \*." Thus he

\* Philofophical effays, effay 7.

places

places the effence of necessary connection or power upon that propenfity which cuftom produces, to pass from an object to the idea of its usual attendant. And from these premiss, he draws a conclusion of a very extraordinary nature, and which he himfelf acknowledges to be not a little paradoxical. His words are: " Upon the whole, neceffity is fomething that " exists in the mind, not in objects; nor is it " poffible for us even to form the most distant " idea of it, confidered as a quality in bodies. " The efficacy or energy in caufes, is neither " placed in the caufes themfelves, nor in the " Deity, nor in the concurrence of these two " principles; but belongs entirely to the foul, " which confiders the union of two or more ob-" jects in all past instances. It is here that the " real power of causes is placed, along with " their connection and neceffity \*."

HE may well admit this doctrine to be a violent paradox; becaufe, in reality, it contradicts our natural perceptions, and wages war with the common fenfe of mankind. We cannot put this in a ftronger light than our author himfelf does, in forming an objection againft his own doctrine. "What! the efficacy of caufes lie " in the determination of the mind! as if caufes " did not operate entirely independent of the

Treatife of human nature, vol. 1. p. 290. 291.

Digitized by Google

" mind,

" mind, and would not continue their opera-" tion, even though there was no mind existent " to contemplate them, or reason concerning " them. This is to reverse the order of na-" ture, and to make that fecondary which is " really primary. To every operation there is " a power proportioned; and this power must " be placed on the body that operates. If we " remove the power from one caule, we must " afcribe it to another. But to remove it from " all causes, and bestow it on a being that is no " ways related to the caufe or effect, but by " perceiving them, is a grofs abfurdity, and " contrary to the most certain principles of hu-" man reason "." In short, nothing is more clear, than that, from the very fight of bodies in motion, we have the idea of power, which connects them together, in the relation of caufe and effect. This power is perceived as a quality in the acting body, and by no means as an operation of the mind, or an eafy transition of thought from one object to another. And therefore, flatly to deny our perception of fuch a quality in bodies, as our author does, is taking upon him to contradict a plain matter of fact, of which all the world can give testimony. He may be at a lofs indeed to discover the source of this perception; because he can neither derive it, nor the idea of fubstance, from his own prin-

\* Pag. 294.

t

ū

ŀ

ŋ

Ľ,

e)

1.

ciples.

ciples. But it has been more than once obferved, that it is too bold, to deny a fact, fupported by the best evidence, merely because one is at a loss to discover the cause. At the fame time, there is no manner of difficulty to lay open the foundation of these perceptions. Both of them are impressions of fight, as is clearly made out above.

AND to fhow, that our author's account of this matter comes far short of truth, it will be plain, from one or two inftances, that though a constant connection of two objects, may, by habit or cuftom, produce a fimilar connection in the imagination ; yet that a conftant connection, whether in the imagination, or betwixt the objects themselves, doth by no means come up to our idea of power. Far from it. In a garrifon, the foldiers constantly turn out at a certain beat of the drum. The gates of the town are opened and shut regularly, as the clock points at a certain hour. These connected facts are observed by a child, are affociated in his mind, and the affociation becomes habitual during a long life. The man, however, above supposed, if not a changeling, never imagines the beat of the drum to be the cause of the motion of the foldiers; nor the pointing of the clock to a certain hour, to be the caule of the opening or flutting of the gates. He perceives the caule of these operations to be very different; and is not led into

into any mistake by the above-mentioned circumstances, however closely connected. Let us put another instance, still more apposite. Such is the human conflictution, that we act necessary, upon the existence of certain motives. The prospect of victuals makes a hungry man accelerate his pace. Respect to an ancient family, moves him to take a wife. An object of distress prompts him to lay out his money, or venture his person. Yet no man dreams a motive to be the cause of action; though, if the doctrine of necessary hold true, here is not only a constant, but a necessary connection \*.

FROM the inftance last given, it appears, that constant connection, and the other circumstances mentioned by our author, are far from coming up to our idea of *power*. There may be even

I,

0

• A thought or idea, it is obvious, cannot be the caule of action; cannot, of itfelf, produce motion. After what manner then does it operate? I explain the matter thus. The power of magnetifm, or any other particular power in matter, by which the body endued with the power is impelled towards other bodies, cannot operate, if there be no other body placed within its fphere of activity. But placing another body there, the magnetic body is directly impelled towards this new body. Yet the new body is not the caule of the motion, but only the occafion of it; the condition of the power being fuch, that the body endued with it cannot operate, but with relation to another body within its fphere of action. Precifely in the fame manner doth the mind act, upon prefenting a thought or idea. The idea is not the caule of the action; only it is fo framed, that it cannot exert its powers, otherways than upon the prefenting of certain objects to it.

Digitized by Google

a neceffary connection betwixt two objects, without putting them in the relation of caufe and effect, and without involving a power in the one to produce the other. Our author, then, attempts rather too bold an enterprife, when he undertakes to argue mankind out of their fenfes. That we have fuch a perception of power as is above described, is a fact that cannot admit of the fmallest controversy. And all that is left him, would he argue with any prospect of succefs, is, to question whether this perception doth in fact correspond to the truth of things. But he will not undertake fo stubborn a task, as to prove this a delusive perception; when he must be sensible of the wonderful harmony that fubfifts betwixt it and the reality of caufes and their effects. We have no reason to suspect deceit in this cafe, more than with regard to many other fenses, some of which remain to be unfoldcd, that are wrought into the conflitution of man, for wife and good purpofes, and without which he would be a very irregular and defective being.

AND were it neceffary to fay more, upon a fubject which indeed merits the utmost attention, we have, if I mistake not, this author's own evidence for us; which I confider as no mean evidence in any cafe; and which must be held of the greatest authority when given against himfclf. And this evidence he gives in his philosophical 2

5

я h

c.

QC.

ş

1

ir j

Ţ

ĩ

5

1.

1

1

phical effays. For though, in this work, he continues to maintain, " That necessity exists " only in the mind, not in objects; and that it " is not possible for us even to form the most " distant idea of it, confidered as a quality in " bodies ;" yet, in the course of the argument. he more than once discovers, that he himself is possessed of an idea of power, confidered as a quality in bodies, though he has not attended to it. Thus he observes \*, " That nature con-" ceals from us those powers and principles on " which the influence of objects entirely de-" pends." And of these powers and principles he gives feveral apt inftances; fuch as, a power or quality in bread to nourish; a power by which bodies perfevere in motion. This is not only owning an idea of power as a quality in bodies, but also owning the reality of this power. In another passage +, he observes, " That the par-" ticular powers by which all natural operations " are performed, never appear to the fenfes;" and "that experience does not lead us to the " knowledge of the fecret power by which one " object produces another." What leads us to the knowledge of this fecret power, is not at prefent the question. But here is the author's own acknowledgment, that he hath an idea of a power in one object to produce another; for he cer-

\* London edition, p. 58. 1 pag. 72.

tainly

Digitized by Google

tainly will not fay, that he is here making use of words without having any ideas annexed to them. In one passage in particular \*, he talks diffinctly and explicitly of "a power in one " object, by which it infallibly produces the o-" ther, and operates with the greatest certainty, " and strongest necessity." No master of language can give a description of power, 'considered as a quality in bodies, in more apt or more expressive terms. So difficult it is, to stille or to difguise natural perceptions and fentiments †.

IF the foregoing arguments have not prevailed, may not the following argument hope for fuccefs ? Figure the fimpleft of all cafes ; a man riling from his feat, to walk in his chamber; and try to analyfe the perception of this fimple event. In the first place, is the man active or passive ? Is he moved, or doth he move himfelf? No mortal is at a loss to understand these queftions; and no mortal is at a lofs to answer them. We have a diffinct perception, that the man is not moved, but moves; or, which is the fame, moves himfelf. Let us examine, in the next place, what is involved in the perception we have, when we fee this man walking. Do we not fay familiarly, doth not a child fay, that he can walk ? And what other thing do we mean

\* pag. 121

+ Naturam expellas furca, tamen ulque recurret.

Digitized by Google

by

by this expression, than that he hath a power to walk ? Doth not the very idea of walking include in it a power to walk? In this inftance. our author, unhappily for his argument, hath neither contiguity nor fuccession to recur to, for -explaining his idea of power, imperfect as it is. And therefore, with regard to this inftance, he must either admit, that we have an idea of power, confidered as a quality in objects, or take upon him to deny, that we have any idea of power at all: for it is evident, that the idea of power, when it comprehends only a fingle object. can never be refolved into a connection in the imagination betwixt two or more objects. We have thus the perception of power from every action, be it of the simplest kind that can be figured. And having once acquired the idea of power exerted by an animal, to put itself in motion, we readily transfer that idea to the actions of bodies, animate and inanimate, upon each other. And, after all, with due regard to an author of very acute parts, I-cannot help obferving, that there is perhaps not one idea of all the train, which is more familiar to us, or more universal, than the idea of power.

e

r

1

۲;

ŀ

x

I

HAVING thus afeertained the reality of our idea of power, as a quality in bodies, and traced it to its proper fource, I shall close this effay with fome observations upon causes and their effects. That we cannot discover power in any U 3 object,

Digitized by Google

object, otherways than by feeing it exert its power, is above observed. Therefore, we can never difcover any object to be a caufe, otherways than by the effect produced. But with regard to things caufed or produced, the cafe is very different. For we can discover an object to be an effect, after the cause is removed, or when it is not at all feen. For inftance, no one is at a lofs to fay, that a table or a chair is an effect produced. A child will ask, who made it ? We perceive every event, every new object, to be an effect or production, the very conception of which involves the idea of a caufe. Hence the maxim, " That nothing can fall out, no-" thing begin to exist, without a cause;" in other words, " That every thing which begins to " exift, must have a cause:" A maxim univerfally recognifed, and admitted by all mankind as felf-evident. Nor can this be attributed to experience. The perception is original, regarding fingular objects and events, the caufes of which are utterly unknown, not less than objects and events which depend upon familiar caufes. Children and ruftics are confcious of this relation, equally with those who have the most confummate experience of nature, and its operations \*.

FURTHER, the perception we have of any object as an effect, includes in it the percep-

• See the effay upon liberty and necessity, p. 64.

tion

1

4

:

ł

tion of a cause proportioned to the effect. If the object be an effect properly adapted to fome end, the perception of it necessarily includes an intelligent defigning cause. If the effect be some good end, brought about by proper means, the perception necessarily includes a defigning and benevolent cause. Nor is it in our power, by any fort of confiraint, to vary these perceptions, or to give them a modification different from what they have by nature. It may be in our power to conceive, but it is not in our power to believe, that a fine painting, a well-wrote poem, or a beautiful piece of architecture, can ever be the effect of chance, or of blind fatality. The supposition indeed, so far as we can discover, involves not any inconfistency in the nature of things. It may be poffible, for any reason we have to the contrary, that a blind and undefigning caufe may be productive of excellent effects. But our senses discover, what reafon does not, that every object which appears beautiful, as adapted to an end or purpole, is the effect of a deligning caufe; and that every object which appears beautiful, as fitted to a good end or purpole, is the effect of a deligning and benevolent caufe. We are fo conftituted, that we cannot entertain a doubt of this, if we would. And, fo far as we gather from experience, we are not deceived.

Digitized by Google

į

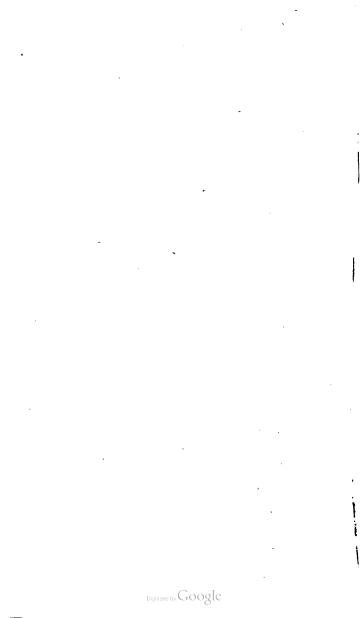
5

1

ġ

r.|

ESSAY



# ESSAY V.

Of our Knowledge of Future Events.

**THILE** we are tied to this globe, fome knowledge of the beings around us, and of their operations, is necessary ; because, without it, we should be utterly at a loss how to conduct ourfelves. This fubiect is handled in two former effays. But were our knowledge limited to this subject, it would not be sufficient for our well-being, and fcarce for our prefervation. It is likeways neceffary, that we have fome knowledge of future events ; for about these we are mostly employed. A man will not fow, if he hath not a prospect of reaping : he will not build a house, if he hath not some fecurity, that it will ftand firm for years. Man is posselled of this valuable branch of knowledge : he can foretell future events. There is no doubt of the fact. The difficulty only is, what are the means employed in making the difcovery. It is, indeed. an established maxim, That the course of nature continues uniformly the fame; and that things will be as they have been. But, from what premisses we draw this conclusion, is not obvious. Uniformity in the operations of nature, with regard to time past, is discovered by experience. But

# 238 KNOWLEDGE OF

But of future time, having no experience, the maxim affuredly cannot be derived from that fource. Neither will reason help us out. It is true, the production of one thing by another, even in a fingle instance, implies a power; and this power is neceffarily connected with its ef-But as power is an internal property, not fect. discoverable but by the effects produced, we can never, by any chain of reasoning, conclude power to be in any body, except in the inftant of operation. The power, for ought we know, may be at an end from that very inftant. We cannot fo much as conclude, from any deduction of reason, that this earth, the sun, or any one being, will exift to-morrow. And, fuppofing their furure existence to be discoverable by reafon, we are not fo much acquainted with the nature or effence of any one thing, as to discover a neceffary connection betwixt it and its powers. that the one subsisting, the other must also subfift. There is nothing more eafily conceived, than that the most active being shall at once be deprived of all its activity : and a thing that may be conceived, can never be proved inconfistent or impossible. An appeal to past experience, will not carry us through. The fun has afforded us light and heat from the beginning of the world. But what reafon have we to conclude, that its power of giving light and heat must continue; when it is as eafy to conceive powers to be limited in point of time, as to conceive them perpetual ?

perpetual? If to help us out here, we have recourfe to the wifdom and goodness of a Supreme Being, as effablishing permanent general laws; the difficulty is, that we have no data, from whence to conclude, in the way of reasoning, that these general laws must continue invariably the fame without end. It is true, the conclusion is actually made, but it must be referred to fome other fource. For reafoning will not aid us, more than experience doth, to draw any one conclusion from past to future events. It is certain, at the fame time, that the uniformity of nature's operations, is a maxim admitted by all mankind. Though altogether unaffifted either, by reason or experience, we never have the least hesitation to conclude, that things will be as they have been; in fo much that we truft our lives and fortunes upon this conclusion. T shall endeavour to trace out the principle upon which this important conclusion is founded. And this fubject will afford, it is hoped, a fresh instance of the admirable correspondence which is difcovered betwixt the nature of man and his external circumftances. What is already made out, will lead us directly to our point. If our conviction of the uniformity of nature be not founded upon reason nor experience, it can have no other foundation but sense. The fact truly is, that we are so constituted, as, by a necessary determination of nature, to transfer our past experience to futurity, and to have a direct perception

tion of the constancy and uniformity of nature. Our knowledge here is intuitive, and is more firm and folid than any conclusion from reasoning can be. This perception must belong to an internal fenfe, becaufe it evidently hath no relation to any of our external fenses. And an argument which hath been more than once stated in the foregoing effays, will be found decifive upon this point. Let us suppose a being which hath no perception or notion of the uniformity of nature : fuch a being will never be able to transfer its past experience to futurity. Every event, however conformable to past experience, will come equally unexpected to this being, as new and rare events do to us ; though poffibly without the fame furprife.

THIS fenfe of conftancy and uniformity in the works of nature, is not confined to the fubject above handled, but difplays itfelf, remarkably, upon many other objects. We have a conviction of a common nature in beings, which are fimilar in their appearances. We expect a likenefs in their conflituent parts, in their appetites, and in their conduct. We not only lay our account with uniformity of behaviour in the fame individual, but in all the individuals of the fame fpecies. This principle hath fuch influence, as even to make us hope for conftancy and uniformity, where experience would lead us to the oppofite conclusion. The rich man never thinks of of poverty, nor the diffressed of relief. Even in this variable climate, we cannot readily bring ourfelves to believe, that good or bad weather will have an end. Nay, it governs our notions in law-matters, and is the foundation of the maxim, "That alteration or change of circum-" ftances is not to be prefumed." Influenced by the fame principle, every man acquires a certain uniformity of manner, which spreads itself upon his thoughts, words, and actions. In our younger years, the effect of this principle is not remarkable, being opposed by a variety of paffions, which, as they have different, and fometimes opposite tendencies, occasion a fluctuation in our conduct. But fo foon as the heat of vouth is over, this principle, acting without counterbalance, feldom fails to bring on a punctual regularity in our way of living, which is extremely remarkable in most old people.

ANALOGY is one of the most common fources of reasoning; the force of which is univerfally admitted. The conviction of every argument founded on analogy, ariseth from this very fense of uniformity. Things similar in fome particulars, are prefumed to be similar in every particular.

4

1

į

In a word, as the bulk of our views and actions have a future aim, fome knowledge of future events is neceffary, that we may adapt our X views

24 Ľ

## 242 KNOWLEDGE OF, &c.

views and actions to natural events. To this end the Author of our nature hath done two things: He hath established a constancy and uniformity in the operations of nature; and he hath given us an intuitive conviction of this constancy and uniformity, and that things will be as they have been.

#### ESSAY

# ESSAY VI.

# Of our DREAD of SUPERNATU-RAL POWERS in the DARK.

VERY flight view of human nature, is fufficient to convince us, that we were not dropt here by accident. This earth is fitted for man, and man is fitted for inhabiting this carth. By means of inftinctive faculties, we have an intuitive knowledge of the things that furround us, at least of those things by which we may be affected. We can discover objects at a distance. We discern them in their connection of cause and effect ; and their future operations are laid open, as well as their prefent. But in this grand apparatus of inftinctive faculties. by which the fecrets of nature are disclosed to us, one faculty feems to be with-held; though in appearance the most useful of all : and that is, a faculty to difcern what things are noxious, and what are friendly. The most poisonous fruits have fometimes the faireft colours; and the favage animals partake of beauty with the tame and harmlefs. And when other particulars are inquired into, it will be found, by induction. that man hath no original fense of what is falutary to him, and what is hurtful.

X 2

Iт

### 244 DREAD OF SUPERNATURAL

IT is natural to inquire why this inflinct is with-held, when it appears to be the defign of nature, to furnish us plentifully with inftincts for the difcovery of ufeful truths. With regard to this matter, it is too bold an undertaking for man to dive into all the fecrets of his maker. We ought to reft contented with the numerous inftances we have of good order and good purpofe, which mult afford us a rational conviction. that good order and good purpose take place univerfally. At the fame time, a rational account may be fuggested of this matter. We have a conviction, that there is nothing redundant or superfluous in the operations of nature. Differ. ent means are never afforded us to bring about the fame end. Experience, fo far as it can go, is given us for acquiring knowledge; and inflinst only, where experience cannot aid us. Inflinct therefore is denied us in the prefent cafe, because the knowledge of what is harmful, and what beneficial, may be obtained by experience. Inflinct, it is true, is a more compendious way of discovering useful truths. But man being intended an active being, is left to his own industry as much as poffible.

i

ì

MAN then is placed in this world, amidft a great variety of objects, the nature and tendency of which are unknown to him, otherways than by experience. In this fituation, he would be in perpetual danger, had he not fome faithful monitor 5 ĺ

6

1 ì

Į.

1

ć

1

;

1

ļ

monitor to keep him conftantly upon the watch against harm. This monitor is the propensity he hath to be afraid of new objects ; fuch efpecially as have no peculiar beauty to raife defire. A child, to whom all nature is strange. dreads the approach of every object; and even the face of man is frightful to it. The fame timidity and fuspicion may be observed in travellers, who converse with strangers, and meet with unknown appearances. Upon the first fight of an herb or fruit, we apprehend the worft, and fuspect it to be noxious. An unknown animal is immediately conceived to be dangerous. The more rare phænomena of nature, the caufes of which are unknown to the vulgar, never fail to frike them with terror. From this induction, it is clear, that we dread unknown objects: They are always furveyed with an emotion of fear, till experience discover them to be harmles.

THIS dread of unknown objects is supposed to enter into the conftitution of all fensible beings, but is most remarkable in the weak and defenceless. The more feeble and delicate the creature is, the more fly and timorous it is obferved to be. No creature is, by nature, more feeble and delicate than man; and this principle is to him of admirable use, to keep him constantly upon guard, and to balance the principle of curiofity, which is prevalent in man above all other. X 3

### 246 DREAD OF SUPERNATURAL.

other creatures, and which, indulged without control, would often betray him into fatal accidents.

THE dread of unknown objects is apt to fire the imagination, fo as to magnify their fuppofed evil qualities and tendencies. For it is a wellknown truth, that paffion hath a wonderful effect upon the imagination. The lefs we know of a new object, the greater liberty we take to drefs it up in frightful colours. The object is forthwith conceived to have all those dreadful qualities which are fuggested by the imagination; and the fame terror is raifed, as if those qualities were real, and not imaginary \*.

AGAIN, where the new and unknown objects have any thing dreadful in appearance, this circumflance, joined with our natural propenfity to dread unknown objects, will raife terror even in the moft refolute. If the evils dreaded from fuch objects be known neither in quality nor degree, the imagination, being under no reftraint, figures the greateft evils, both in kind and magnitude, that can be conceived. Where no immediate harm enfues, the mind, by the impulfe it hath received, transports itself into futurity, and imagines the ftrange forms to be prefages of direful calamities. Hence it is, that the uncommon phænomena of nature, fuch as

\* See effay upon belief.

comets,

comets, eclipies, earthquakes, and the like, are, by the vulgar, held as forerunners of uncommon events. Grand objects make a deep imprefiion upon the mind, and give force to that paffion which occupies it at the time. The above appearances being uncommon, if not altogether new, difpofe the mind to terror; which, aided by the emotion arifing from the grandeur of the objects, produceth great agitation, and a violent: apprehension of danger.

6

y

Ð

; ;)

Ē:

i

. .

V

ż

1

93

Ŕ

D

£K.

0

fi.

(ľ

\$

ź

5

THE ftrongeft and most familiar instance of our natural propenfity to dread unknown objects, is the fear that feizes many young perfons in the dark; a phænomenon that has not been accounted for with any degree of fatisfaction. Light difpofeth the mind to chearfulness and courage. Darknefs, on the contrary, depreffes the mind, and disposeth it to fear. Any object alarms the mind, when it is already prepared by darkness to receive impressions of fear. The object, which, in the dark, is feen but obfcurely, leaves the heated imagination at full liberty, to beftow upon it the most dreadful appearance. This phantom of the imagination, conceived as a reality, unhinges the mind, and throws it into a fit of distraction. The imagination, now heated to the highest degree, multiplies the dreadful appearances to the utmost bounds of its conception. The object becomes a spectre, a devil, a hobgoblin,

## 248 DREAD OF SUPERNATURAL, &c.

hobgoblin, fomething more terrible than everwas feen or defcribed.

A VERY few accidents of this kind, having fo powerful an effect, are fufficient to introduce an affociation between darknefs and malignant powers. And when once this affociation is formed, there is no occafion for the appearance of an object to create terror. Frightful ideas croud into the mind, and augment the fear which is occafioned by darknefs. The imagination becomes ungovernable, and converts thefe ideas into real appearances.

THAT the terror occafioned by darknefs, is entirely owing to the operations of the imagination, will be evident from a fingle reflection, that in company no fuch effect is produced. A companion can afford no fecurity againft fupernatural powers. But a companion hath the fame effect with funfhine, to chear the mind, and preferve it from gloominefs and defpondency. The imagination is thereby kept within bounds, and under due fubjection to fenfe and reafon.

### ESSAY

# E S S A Y VII.

## Of our KNOWLEDGE of the DEITY.

HE arguments a priori for the existence and attributes of the Deity, are urged, with the greatest shew of reason, in the fermons preached at Boyle's lectures. But the fermons upon this fubject, though they command my strictest attention, never have gained my heart : on the contrary, they always give me a fenfible uneafinefs: the caufe of which I have been at a lofs to difcover, though I imagine I can now explain it. Such deep metaphysical reasoning, if it afford any conviction, is furely not adapted to the vulgar and illiterate. Is the knowledge of God, then, referved for perfons of great study and deep thinking? Is a vail thrown over the eves of the reft of mankind? This thought always returned upon me, and gave me pain. If there really exift a Being, who made, and who governs the world; and if it be his purpofe to difplay himfelf to his rational creatures; it is not confistent with any idea we can form of the power and wildom of this Being, that his purpole should be defeated; which plainly is the cafe, in a great measure, if he can only be difcovered, and but obfcurely, by a very finall part of mankind. At the fame time, to found our knowledge

knowledge of the Deity upon reafoning folely, is not agreeable to the analogy of nature. We are not left to gather our duty by abfract reafoning, nor indeed by any reafoning. It is engraved upon the table of our hearts. We adapt our actions to the courfe of nature, by mere inftinct, without reafoning, or even experience. Therefore, if we can truft to analogy, we ought to expect, that God will difcover himfelf to us, in fome fuch manner as may take in all mankind, the vulgar and illiterate, as well as the deep-thinking philofopher.

IF these abstructs arguments, however, be relisted by the learned and speculative, it is so far well. I cannot help acknowledging, that they afford me no conviction; at least no folid and permanent conviction. We know little about the nature of things, but what we learn from a strict attention to our own nature. That nothing can begin to exist without a cause, is sufficiently evident from sense \*. But that this can be demonstrated by any argument *a priori*, drawn from the nature of things, I have not observed  $\ddagger$ . And if demonstration fail us in the very outsetting, we cannot hope for its affistance in the after steps. If any one being can begin to exist without a cause, every being may; upon which supposi-

+ See the fame effay, at the beginning.

tion,

<sup>\*</sup> See the effay of our idea of power, towards the clofe.

tion, we never can hope for a demonstration. that any one being must be eternal. But if this difficulty shall be furmounted, we have another to ftruggle with. Admitting that fomething has existed from all eternity, I find no data to determine a priori, whether this world have exifted of itfelf from all eternity, in a constant succesfion of caufes and effects; or whether it be an effect produced by an almighty power. It is indeed hard to conceive a world, eternal and felfexistent, where all things are carried on by blind fate, without defign or intelligence. And yet I can find no demonstration to the contrary. If we can form any obscure notion of one intelligent being, exifting from all eternity, it appears not more difficult to form a notion of a fucceffion of beings, with or without intelligence; or a notion of a perpetual fuccession of causes and effects.

In fhort, difficulties prefs both ways. But these difficulties, when examined, arise not from any inconfistency in our ideas. They are occasioned by the limited capacity merely of the mind of man. We cannot comprehend an eternity of existence. It is an object too bulky. It cludes our grasp. The mind is like the eye. It cannot take in an object that is very great or very little. This plainly is the fource of our difficulties, when we attempt speculations fo remote from common apprehension. Abstract reafoning

ñ

ß

5

ï,

ĉ

ž

### 252 OUR KNOWLEDGE

Loning upon fuch a fubject, must lead into endlefs perplexities. It is indeed lefs difficult to conceive one eternal unchangeable Being who made the world, than to conceive a blind chain of caufes and effects. At leaft, we are difpofed to the former, as being more agreeable to the imagination. But as we cannot find any inconfiftency in the latter fuppofition, we cannot justly fay that it is demonstrably false.

GIVE me leave to add, that to bring out fuch abstrufe and intricate speculations into any clear light, is, at any rate, fcarce to be expected. And if, after the utmost straining, they remain obscure and unaffecting, it is evident to me, that they must have a bad tendency. Perfons of a peevish and gloomy cast of mind, finding no conviction from that quarter, will be fortified in their propension to believe, that all things happen by blind chance; that there is no wisdom, order, nor harmony, in the government of this world; and confequently, that there is no God.

BEING, therefore, little folicitous about arguments *a priori* for the existence of a Deity, which are not proportioned to the capacity of man, I apply myself with zeal and chearfulness, to fearch for the Deity in his works; for by these we must discover him, if he have thought proper to make himself known. And the better to manage the inquiry, I shall endeavour to make out ı.

out three propositions; 1/t, That if there exist a being, who is the maker and governor of the world, it seems to be a neceffary part of his government, that he should make himself known to his intelligent creatures. 2dly, That in fact he hath done so. And, 3dly, That to compass this end, a method is employed entirely suited to the nature of man, and the same by which many other truths of the greatest importance are laid open to him.

THERE certainly cannot be a more discouraging thought to man, than that the world was formed by a fortuitous concourse of atoms, and that all things are carried on by blind impulse. Upon that supposition, he can have no security for his life; nor for his continuing to be a moral agent, and an intelligent creature, even for a moment. Things have been carried on with regularity and order : but chance may, in an instant, throw all things into the most horrid and difmal confusion. We can have no folid comfort in virtue, when it is a work of mere chance; nor can we justify our reliance upon the faith of others, when the nature of man refts upon fo precarious a foundation. Every thing must appear gloomy, difmal, and disjointed, without a Deity to unite this world of beings into one bcautiful and harmonious fystem. These confiderations, and many more that will occur upon the first reflection, afford a very strong conviction, Y

viction, if there be a wife and good Being, who fuperintends the affairs of this world, that he will not conceal himfelf from his rational creatures. Can any thing be more defirable, or more fubftantially ufeful, than to know, that there is a Being from whom no fecrets are hid, to whom our good works are acceptable, and even the good purpofes of our hearts; and whofe government, directed by wifdom and benevolence, ought to make us reft fecure, that nothing doth or will fall out but according to good order ? This fentiment, rooted in the mind, is an antidote to all misfortune. Without it, life is at beft but a confufed and gloomy fcene.

AND this leads to a different confideration, which makes our knowledge of a benevolent Deity of the greatest importance to us. Though natural and moral evil are far from prevailing in this world, yet fo much of both is fcattered over the face of things, as to create fome degree of doubt, whether there may not be a mixture of chance, or of ill-will, in the government of this world. But once fuppoling the fuperintendency of a good being, these evils are no longer confidered as fuch. A man reftrains himfelf from unlawful pleasures, though the restraint gives him pain. But then he does not confider this pain as an evil to repine at. He fubmits to it voluntarily and with fatisfaction, as one doth ta

S

Г: З

. 0

÷

X

ų

3

3

ني مدر نظر

ĩ

1

ŝ

5

i

>

I¢

5

á

đ

j

to grief for the loss of a friend; being confcious that it is *right* and *fit* for him to be fo affected. In the fame manner, he fubmits to all the evils of this life. Having confidence in the good government of the Deity, he is perfuaded that every thing happens for the beft, and therefore that it is his duty to fubmit to whatever happens. This unfolds a fcene fo enlivening, and fo productive of chearfulness and good humour, that we cannot readily think, if there be a benevolent Deity, that he will with-hold from his creatures fo invaluable a bleffing.

MAN, at the fame time, by his tafte for beauty, regularity, and order, is fitted for contemplating the wifdom and goodnefs difplayed in the frame and government of this world. Thefe are proper objects of admiration and joy. It is not agreeable to the ordinary course of nature, that man should be endued with an affection, without having a proper object to bestow it upon. And as the providence of the Deity is the highest object of this affection, it would be unnatural, that man should be kept in ignorance of it.

THESE, I admit, are but probable reasons for believing, that if there exist a benevolent Deity, it must be his intention to manifest himself to his creatures: but they carry a very high degree of probability, which leaves little room for ¥ 2 doubt.

doubt. At the fame time, though it should beour fate to fearch in vain for this object of our affection, we ought not however to despair, and, in that defpair to conclude there is no God. Let us but reflect, that he hath not manifested himfelf to all his creatures. The brutes apparently know nothing of him. And should we be difappointed in this fearch, the worft we can conclude is, that, for good and wife purpofes, which we cannot dive into, he hath thought proper to with-hold himfelf also from us. We certainly have no reason to convert our ignorance into an argument against his existence Our ignorance brings us only a step lower, and puts us, fo far, upon a footing with the brute creation.

THE fecond and important branch of our difquifition is, to afcertain this fact, that there is a Deity, and that he hath manifefted himfelf to us. I requeft only attention of my reader, and not any unreafonable conceffion. In a former effay \*, two propositions are made out. The first is, That every thing which hath a beginning, is perceived as a production or effect, which neceffarily involves the idea of a caufe. The fecond, That we neceffarily transfer to the caufe, whatever of contrivance or defign is difcovered: in the effect. Confidering a houfe, garden, pic-

· Of our idea of power.

ture,

÷

ľ

d

d

12

z

3

c

3

8

ß

ç

;1

s a

k

•

.

F

ture, or flatue, in itfelf, it is perceived as beautiful. If we attend to these objects in a different view, as things having a beginning, we perceive them to be effects, involving the idea of a cause. If, again, we consider them as artfully contrived to answer certain purposes, we perceive them to be the workmanship of some person of skill. Nor are we deceived in these perceptions. Upon examination, we find, that they correspond to truth and reality.

Bur not only are those objects perceived as effects, which we afterwards learn, from experience, to be the production of man. Natural objects, fuch as plants and animals, as well as all other objects which once were not, are also perceived as effects, or as the production of fome cause. The question will always recur, How came it here ? Who made it ? What is the cause of its existence ?.

WE are fo accultomed to human arts, that every work of defign and ufe will be attributed to man. But what if it exceed his known powers and faculties? This fuppolition doth not alter the nature of our perceptions; but only leads us to a different caufe; and, in place of man, to determine upon fome fuperior power. If the object be confidered as an effect, it neceffarily involves the idea of a caufe; and the caufe cannot be man, if the object of our per-Y<sub>3</sub> ception

Digitized by Google

## 258 OUR KNOWLEDGE

ception be an effect far furpaffing the power of man. This train of thinking leads us directly to our point. Attend but to the anatomy of the: meanelt plant : fo much of art and of curiousmechaniim is difcovered in it, that it must bethe production of fome caute, far furpaffing the power and intelligence of man. The fcene opens more and more, when, paffing from plants to animals, we come to man the most wonderful of all the works of nature. And when, at laft, we take in, at one view, the material and meral world; full of harmony, order, and beauty; happily adjusted in all its parts to answergreat and giomous purpofes; there is, in this. grand production, necessarily involved the perception of a caule, unbounded in power, intelligence, and goodnefs.

THUS it is that the Deity hath manifelted himfelf to us, by the means of principles wrought into our nature, which muft infallibly operate, upon viewing objects in their relation of caufe and effect. We diffeover external objects by their qualities of colour, figure, fize, and motion. In the perception of these qualities, connected after a certain manner, is comprehended the perception of the fubflance or thing to which these qualities belong. At the fame time, we perceive this fubflance or thing, fuppofing it to have a beginning of existence, to be an effect produced by fome caufe. And we perceive the powers.

þ

powers and properties of this caule from its ef-If there be an aptitude in the effect to fects. fome end, we attribute to the caufe, intelligence: and defign. If the effect produced be fomething that is good in itfelf, or that hath a tendency to fome good end or purpole, we attribute goodness to the cause, as well as intelligence and defign. And this we do, not by any procefs of reafoning, but by fenfe and perception. The Deity hath not left his existence to be gathered from flippery and far-fetched arguments. We need but open our eyes, to receive impreffions of him almost from every thing we perceive. We discover his being and attributes in the fame manner that we difcover external ob-iects. We have the evidence of our fenses :and none but those who are fo stubbornly hypo-. thetical, as to deny the existence of matter, against the evidence of their senses, can seriouslyand deliberately deny the existence of the Deity. In fine, there is a wonderful harmony established betwixt our perceptions and the course of nature. We rely on our perceptions, for the existence of external objects, and their past, prefent, and future operations. We rely on these perceptions by the necessity of our nature; and, upon experience, find ourfelves not deceived. Our perception of the Deity is as diffinct and authoritative, as that of external objects. And though here we cannot have experience to appeal to, the want of experience can never afford an argument

1

ł

# 260 OUR KNOWLEDGE

argument against the authority of any perception; where, from the nature of the thing, there can be no experience. It is fufficient for conviction, that our perceptions in general correspond to the truth of things, where-ever there is an opportunity to try them by experience; and therefore we can have no cause to doubt of our perceptions in any case where they are not contradicted by experience.

So far the Deity is discoverable, by every perfon who goes but one step beyond the furface of things, and their mere existence. We may indeed behold the earth in its gayeft drefs. the heavens in all their glory, without having any perception other than that of beauty, fomething in these objects that pleases and delights us. Many pass their lives, brutishly involved in the groß pleafures of fenfe, without having any perception, at least any strong or permanent perception of the Deity : and poffibly this, in general, is the cafe of favages, before they are humanized by fociety and government. But the Deity cannot be long hid from those who are accustomed to any degree. of reflection. No fooner are we prepared to relish beauties of the fecond and third class \*; no fooner do we acquire a tafte for regularity, or-

• See the effay upon the foundation and principles of the law of nature,

Digitized by Google

der,

der, defign, and good purpose, than we begin to perceive the Deity in the beauty of the opera-tions of nature. Savages, who have no confiftent rule of conduct, who act by the blind impulle of passion and appetite, and who have only a glimmering of the moral fense, are but ill qualified to discover the Deity in his works. If they have little or no perception of a just tenor of life, of the dignity of behaviour, and of the beauty of action, how should they perceive the beauty of the works of creation, and the admirable harmony of all the parts, in the great fyftem of things ? Being confcious of nothing but diforder and fenfual impulse within, they cannot. be confcious of any thing better without them. Society teaches mankind felf-denial, and improves the moral fense. Disciplined in society, the taffe for order and regularity unfolds itfelf by degrees. The focial affections gain the afcendant, and the morality of actions gets firm poffession of the mind. In this improved state, the beauty of the creation makes a flrong impreffion; and we can never cease admiring the excellency of that caufe, who is the author of fo many beautiful effects. And thus, to fociety, we owe all the bleffings of life; and particularly, the knowledge of the Deity, the most valuable branch of human knowledge.

HITHERTO we have gone no farther, than to, point out the means by which we difcover the Deity, Deity, and his attributes of power, wildom, and coodnefs. So far are we carried by those wonderful principles in our nature, which discover the connection betwixt caufe and effect, and from the effect discover the powers and properties of the caule. But there is one attribute of the Supreme Being, of the molt effential kind, which remains to be unfolded. It is what commonly paffeth under the name of felf-existence, that he must have existed for ever; and, consequently, that he cannot be confidered as an effect, to require a caufe of his existence ; but, on the contrary, without being caufed, that, mediately or immediately, he is the caufe of all other things. A principle we have had occasion more than once to mention, will make this evident ; fciz. That nothing can begin to exift without a caufe. Every thing which comes into existence, and once was not, is, by a necessary determination of our nature, perceived as an effect, or as a production; the very conception of which involves an adequate caufe. Now, if every thing have a beginning, one being at least, to wit, that which fust came into existence, must be an effect or production without a caufe ; which is a direct inconfistency. If all beings had a beginning, there was a time when the world was an abfolute void ; upon which fuppolition, it is intuitively certain, that nothing could ever have come into existence. This proposition we perceive to be true; and our perception affords us, in.

i

ŋ

1

8

ģ

ġ

ż

ļ

ы)

ŝ

ţ

ş

z

.

1

ł

ż

l

in this cafe, a more folid conviction than any demonstration can do. One being, therefore, must have existed from all eternity; who, as he is not an effect or production, cannot poffibly be indebted for his existence to any other being. At the fame time, as we can have no foundation for supposing the existence of more eternal beings than one, this one being must be the Deity : becaufe all other beings, mediately or immediately. owe their existence to him. All other beings. as they are supposed to be produced in time. must have a cause of their existence; and, by the supposition, there can be no other cause but this eternal Being. The bulk of mankind probably, in their notions of the Deity, scarce comprehend this attribute of felf-existence. A man must be accustomed a good deal to abstract reasoning, who of himself discovers this truth. But it is not difficult to explain it to others, after it is discovered. And it deferves well to be inculcated; for without it our knowledge of the Deity must be extremely imperfect. His other attributes of power, wildom, and goodnels, are, in some measure, communicated to his creatures ; but his attribute of felf-existence makes the ftrongeft opposition imaginable betwixt him and his creatures.

A FEW words will fuffice upon the third propolition, which, in a good measure, is already explained. The effence of the Deity is far beyond

wond the reach of our comprehension. Were he to exhibit himfelf to us in broad day-light, it is not a thing supposable, that he could be reached by any of our external senses. The attributes of felf-existence, wildom, goodness, and power, are purely intellectual. And therefore, fo far as we can comprehend; there are no ordinary means to acquire any knowledge of the Deity, but by his works. By means, indeed, of that fenfe which discovers causes from their effects. he hath manifested himself to us in a satisfactory manner, liable to no doubt nor error. And after all, what further evidence can we defire, when the evidence we have of his existence is little inferior to that we have of our own existence ? Impressions or perceptions serve us for evidence in both cafes \*. Our own existence. indeed, is, of all facts, that which concerns us the most : and therefore of our own existence we ought to have the highest certainty. Next to it, we have not, as it appears to me, a greater certainty of any matter of fact, than of the existence of the Deity. It is, at least, equal to the certainty we have of external objects, and of the conftancy and uniformity of the operations of nature, upon the faith of which our whole schemes of life are adjusted.

THE arguments a posteriori which have been

• See the effay upon the idea of felf, and perforal identity. urged Ē

3

5

ķ

K

ř

1

5

İ.

C

J

s,

j

į,

ż

5

đ

ø

ł

1

1

1

1

urged for the being and attributes of the Deity, are generally defective. There is always wanting one link of the chain, to wit, that peculiar principle upon which is founded our knowledge of causes and their effects. But the calm perceptions, turning habitual by frequent repetition, are apt to be overlooked in our reasonings. Many a proposition is rendered obscure, by much laboured argument, for the truth of which we need but appeal to our own perceptions. Thus we are told, that the frame and order of the world, the wifdom and goodnefs difplayed in every part of it, are an evident demonstration of the being of a God. These things, I acknowledge, afford us full conviction of his being. But, laying afide fenfe and perception, I fhould be utterly at a lofs, by any fort of reafoning, to conclude the existence of any one thing from that of any other thing. In particular, by what procefs of reafoning can we demonstrate this conclusion to be true, That order and beauty must needs proceed from a defigning cause? It is true, the idea of an effect involves the idea of a caufe. But how does reafon make out, that the thing we name an effect, may not exist of itself. as well as what we name a cause? If it be urged, that human works, where means are apparently adjusted to an end, and beauty and order discovered, are always known to be the effects of intelligence and defign : I admit this to be true, fo far as I have experience. But where Z

where experience fails me, I defire to know, by what step, what link in the chain of reafoning, am I to connect my past experience with this inference, that in every case I ought to form the fame conclusion. If it be faid, that nature prompts us to judge of fimilar instances, by former experience; this is giving up reason and demonstration, to appeal to that very fense on which I contend the evidence of this truth must entirely rest. All the arguments *a posteriori* may be refolved into this principle; which, no doubt, had its due influence upon the writers who handle the prefent fubject ; though, I must be allowed to fay, it hath not been explained, nor, perhaps, fufficiently underftood by them; whereby all of them have been led into the error of stating, as demonstrative reasoning, what is truly an appeal to our fenses. They reason, for example, upon the equality of males and females, and hold the infinite odds. against this equality, to be a demonstration, that matters cannot be carried on by chance. This, confidered merely as reafoning, does not conclude ; for, befides that chance is infinite in its varieties, there may be fome blind fatality, fome unknown caufe, in the nature of things, which produceth this uniformity. But though reason cannot afford demonstration in this case, sense and perception afford conviction. The equality of males and females, is one of the many instances which we know and perceive to be effects

fects of a defigning caufe ; and of which we can no more entertain a doubt, than of our own exiftence. The fame principle which unfolds to us the connection of caufes and their effects in the most common events, difcovers this whole univerfe to ftand in the relation of an effect to a fupreme caufe.

To substitute perception in place of reason and demonstration, may feem to put the evidence of the Deity upon too low a footing. But this is a millake ; for the effect is directly opposite. Intuition affords a higher degree of conviction than any reafoning poffibly can do. And after all, human reafon ought not to be fo much vaunted of as is commonly done by philosophers. It affords very little aid in making original difcove-The comparing things together, and diries. recting our inferences from fenfe and experience, are its proper province. In this way reafon gives its aid, in our inquiries concerning the Deity. It enlarges our views of final caufes, and of the prevalence of wifdom and goodnefs. But the application of the argument from final caufes, to prove the existence of a Deity, and the force of our conclusion from beautiful and orderly effects to a deligning caule, are not from reason, but from an internal light, which shows things in their relation of caufe and effect. These conclusions reft entirely upon fense and perception; and it is furprifing, that writers should overlook Z 2

verlook what is fo natural, and fo obvious. But the pride of man's heart makes him defire to extend his difcoveries by dint of reafoning. For reafoning is our own work. There is merit in acutencfs and penetration; and we are better plcafed to affume merit to ourfelves, than humbly to acknowledge, that, to the most important difcoveries, we are directly led by the hand of the Almighty \*.

HAVING unfolded that principle upon which I would reft the moft important of all truths, objections must not be overlooked, fuch as appear to have weight: and I shall endeavour to give these objections their utmost weight; which ought to be done in every dispute, and which becomes more strictly a duty, in handling a subject where truth is of the utmost importance.

#### CONSIDERING the foregoing argument on all

• To prevent mistakes, it is proper to be observed, that, in a lax fonde, reason comprehends intuition, as well as the power of drawing conclusions from premisses. But here it is used in its strict and proper lende, as opposed to intuition. By intuition we perceive certain propositions to be true, precisely as by fight we perceive certain things to exist. Other propositions require a chain of comparisons, and feveral intermediate fleps, before we arrive at the conclusion; by which we perceive, either demonstrably or probably, the proposition to be true. Hence it is clear, that intuitive knowledge, which is acquired by a fingle act of perception, must fland higher in the scale of conviction, than any reasoning can do which requires a plurality of perceptions. The more complex any process is by which we acquire knowledge, the greater is the chance of error; and confequently the kets entire our conviction.

fides,

Digitized by Google

t

ŋ 5

у.

đ

fides, I do not find, that it can be more advantageoufly combated, than by oppofing to it, the eternity and felf-existence of the world, governed by chance or blind fatality. It is above admitted to be very difficult, by any abstract reafoning, to prove the inconfistency of this fuppolition. But we have an intuitive perception of the inconlistency; for the frame and conduct of this world contain in them too much of wifdom, art, and forefight, to admit of the fuppofition of chance or blind fatality. We are neceffarily determined, by a principle in our nature, to attribute fuch effects to fome intelligent and defigning caufe. Supposing this caufe to be the world itfelf, we have, at leaft, got free from the fuppolition of chance and blind fatality. And if the world be a being endued with unbounded power, intelligence, and benevolence, the world is the being we are in queft of; for we have no other idea of the Deity, but of an eternal and felf-existent being, endued with power, wifdom, and goodnefs. But the hypothefis, thus reformed, still contradicts our perceptions. The world is made up of parts, separable, and actually feparated. The attributes of unbounded power, intelligence, and benevolence, do certainly not belong to this earth ; and as little to the fun, moon, or ftars; which are not conceived to be even voluntary agents. Therefore thefe attributes must belong to a Being, who made the Z 3 earth.

Digitized by Google

earth, fun, moon, and ftars, and who connects the whole together in one fystem.

A SECOND objection may be, That the foregoing reafoning, by which we conclude the eternity and felf-existence of one Being, who made this world, doth not necessfarily infer such a conclusion, but only an eternal fuccession of such beings; which may be reckoned a more natural supposition, than the idea of one eternal felf-existent Being, without any cause of his existence.

IN matters fo profound, it is difficult to form. notions with any degree of accuracy. I have observed above, that it is too much for man, to grafp, in his thought, an eternal Being, whofe existence, upon that account, cannot admit of the supposition of a cause. To talk, as some of our metaphyfical writers do, of an abfolute necoffity in the nature of the Being, as the caufe of his existence, is mere jargon. For we can conceive nothing more clearly, than that the caule must go before the effect, and that the caufe cannot poffibly be in the effect. But however difficult it may be to conceive one eternal Being, without a caufe of its existence; it is not less difficult to conceive an eternal succesfion of beings, deriving their existence from each other. For though every link be supposed a production, the chain itself exists without a caufe, as well as one eternal Being does. Therefore

fore an eternal fuccession of beings is not a more natural supposition, than one eternal felfexistent Being. And taking it in a different light. it will appear a supposition much less natural, or rather altogether unnatural. Succession in exiftence, implying the fucceffive annihilation of individuals, is indeed a very natural conception. But then it is intimately connected with frail and dependent beings, and cannot, without the utmost violence to the conception, be applied to the Maker of all things, to whom we naturally ascribe perpetual existence, and every other perfection. And therefore, as this hypothesis of a perpetual fucceffion, when applied to the Deity, is deflitute of any fupport from reason or experience, and is contradicted by every one of our natural perceptions, there can be no ground for adopting it.

THE noted remark, That primos in orbe deos fecit timor, may be objected; as it will be thought unphilosophical, to multiply causes for our belief of a Deity, when fear alone must have that effect. For my part, I have little doubt of the truth of the remark, taking it in its proper fense, that fear is the foundation of our belief of invisible malevolent powers. For it is evident, that fear can never be the cause of our belief of a benevolent Deity. I have unfolded, in another essays, the cause of our dread of malevo-

i

• Of our dread of supernatural powers in the dark.

lent

27 I

Digitized by Google

272 OUR KNOWLEDGE

lent invisible powers. And I am perfuaded, that nothing has been more hurtful to religion, than an irregular propenfity in our nature to dread fuch powers. Superficial thinkers are apt to confound these phantoms of the imagination, with the objects of our true and genuine perceptions: and finding fo little reality in the former, they are apt to conclude the latter also to be a fiction. But if they gave any fort of deliberate attention, they would foon learn, by the affiftance of hiftory, as well as by original perception, to diffinguish these objects, as having no real connection with each other. Man, in his original favage state, is a shy and timorous animal, dreading every new object, and attributing every extraordinary event to fome invisible malevolent power. Led, at the fame time, by mere appetite, he hath little idea of regularity and order, of the morality of actions, or of the beauty of nature. In this flate he naturally multiplies his invifible malevolent powers, without entertaining any notion of a supreme Being, the Creator of all things. As man ripens in fociety, and is benefited by the good will of others, his dread of new objects gradually leffens. He begins to perceive regularity and order in the courfe of nature. He becomes sharp-fighted, in discovering causes from effects, and effects from caules. He afcends gradually, through the different orders of beings, and their operations, till he difcovers the Deity, who is the caufe of all things. When we

273

we run over the hiftory of man, it will be found to hold true in fact, that favages, who are the most possessed with the opinion of evil spirits, are, of all people, the most deficient in the knowledge of a Deity; and that as all civilized nations, without exception, entertain the firm belief of a Deity, fo the dread of evil fpirits wears out in every nation, in proportion to their gradual advances in focial intercourfe \*. AND

t

D

d

r.

Ë

E

1

k

Ì.

1

Č,

i

â

ŕ

ť

ì ٠,

t

· With respect to the deification of heroes, which was the practice in the first stages of fociety, it is a common opinion, that, in the eagerness of a too forward gratitude to those who had in any degree contributed to the better accommodation of life. their countrymen no fooner faw them removed by death from the fociety of men, than they exalted them to that of the gods. I cannot for my part relifh this conjecture. The notions of immortality among favages are generally obfcure; and when a man is cut off by a natural or violent death, he is not, among barbarians, conc. ed to be still alive, far less to be translated into a higher order of beings. It is true, that among favages, where every new invention makes a fhining figure, a man who contributes in any measure to the accommodation of fociety, is honoured during his life, and remembered after his death; and to honour the memory of fuch men, feafts and ceremonies have been inflituted. It is not reasonable to believe, that at first the matter was carried any further. That, among favages, the first notions of fupernatural powers arole from fear, is extremely probable. In the gradual improvement of fociety, regularity, order, and good defign, came in fome obfcure manner to be recognized in the affairs of this world; and this naturally fuggefted the superintendence of benevolent powers, perhaps of the sun or moon, those exalted and illustrious beings. This apparently was the first dawn of internal conviction with respect to the Deity. So far is certain, that Polytheilin was first recognized before the unity of the Deity was discovered by our more enlightened facul-In this first stage of religion, superior beings, according to ties. the notions entertained of them, were much limited in power, as well as in benevolence. Men could not firain their thoughts

to conceive much more power or benevolence than existed in their

AND this leads to a reflection, which cannot fail to have-universal influence. Man, in a favage and brutish flate, is hurried away by every gust of passion, and by every phantom of the imagination. His powers and faculties are improved by education, and good culture. He acquires deep knowledge in the nature of things. and learns accurately to diftinguish truth from faliehood. What more fatisfying evidence can we require of the truth of our perceptions of the Deity, than to find these perceptions prevalent, in proportion as mankind improve in the arts of life ? Thefe perceptions go hand in hand with the rational powers. As man increafeth in knowledge, and in the difcerning faculties, his perceptions of the Deity become proportionally more ftrong, clear, and authoritative. The univerfal conviction of a Deity, which hath, without exception, foread through all civilized nations, cannot possibly be without a foundation in our nature. To infult that it may, is to infult,

their own species. Such confined and groveling notions favoured the system of Polytheis for we are apt to supply by numbers what is wanting in energy; and as fear had multiplied the number of malevolent powers, hope was not lefs fruitful with respect to those who were supplied benevolent. Then it was, and no fooner, that good men, held in remembrance by solemn inflitutions, were, in the fond imagination of their countrymen, advanced a flep higher, and converted into genil, or tutelary deities. They were sole to supplied to superintend the affairs of mankind, and, in their exalted flate, to continue that good-will to their country which was for remarkable during their existence in the numan finape. These appear to be the natural gradations of the mind in its progress towards the Deity.

that

It

12

5

i.

ŝ

1

51

.

3

:

5

ļ

¢

þ

¢

that an effect may be without an adequate caufe. Reafon cannot be an adequate cause; because our reasonings upon this subject, must, at best. be abstrufe, and beyond the comprehension of the bulk of mankind. Our knowledge, therefore, of the Deity, must be founded on intuition and perception, which are common to mankind. And it is agreeable to the analogy of nature, that God should discover himself to his rational creatures after this manner. If this fubject be involved in any degree of obfcurity, writers are to blame, who, in a matter of fo great importance, ought to give no quarter to inaccuracy of thought or expression. But it is an error common in the bulk of writers, to fubstitute reason in place of intuitive perception. The faculty of perception, working filently, and without effort, is generally overlooked : and we must find a reason for every thing we judge to be true; though the truth of the propolition often depends, not upon reasoning, but mercly upon perception. It is thus that morality has been involved in fome obscurity, by metaphysical writers; and it is equally to be regretted, that, by the fame fort of writers, the knowledge of the Deity hath alfo been involved in fome obfcurity.

HAVING fettled the belief of a Deity upon its proper basis, we shall proceed to take a general view of the attributes which belong to that great Being. And, first,

275

Digitized by Google

# 276 OUR KNOWLEDGE

## Of the UNITY of the DEITY.

WITH regard to this, and all the other attributes of the Deity, it ought to be no difcouraging reflection, that we cannot attain an adequate idea of them. The Deity is too grand an object to be comprehended, in any perfect manner, by the human mind. We have not words nor ideas which any way correspond to the manner of his existence. Should some good angel undertake to be our inftructor, we would still be at a loss to form a distinct conception of it. Power, intelligence, and goodnefs, are attributes which we can comprehend. But with regard to the nature of the Deity in general, and the manner of his existence, we must be fatiffied, in this mortal state, to remain much in the dark. The attribute of Unity, is what, of all, we have the least certainty about, by the light of nature. It is not inconfistent, that there should be two or more beings of the very highest order, whofe effence and actions may be fo regulated by the nature of the beings themfelves, as to be altogether concordant and harmonious. In truth, the nature of the Divine Being is fo far out of our reach, that we must be absolutely at a loss to apply to it unity or multiplicity. This property applies to numbers, and to individual things; but we know not that it will apply to the Deity. At the fame time, if we may venture

ture to judge of a matter fo remote from common apprehension, we ought to conclude in favour of the attribute of *unity*. We perceive the necessfity of one eternal being; and it is sufficient, that there is not the smallest foundation from sense or reason, to suppose more than one.

Dŧ

Digitized by Google

#### 278 OUR KNOWLEDGE

# Of the POWER and INTELLIGENCE of the DEITY.

THESE two attributes I join together, becaufe the fame reflection will apply to both. The wifdom and power which muft neceffarily be fuppoled in the creation and government of this world, are fo far beyond the reach of our comprehension, that they may justly be flyled *infinite*. We can aferibe no bounds to either: and we have no other notion of *infinite*, but that to which we can aferibe no bounds.

OF THE DEITY. 279

#### Of the BENEVOLENCE of the DEITY.

9

2

Ŀ

12

'n.

7

j

û

İ.

ķ

THE mixed nature of the events which fall under our observation, seems, at first fight, to point out a mixed caufe, partly good and part-The author of Philosophical esfays ly ill. concerning human understanding, in his eleventh effay, Of the practical consequences of natural religion, puts in the mouth of an Epicurean philosopher a very shrewd argument against the benevolence of the Deity. The fum of it is what follows. " If the caufe be known " only by the effect, we never ought to affign " to it any qualities, beyond what are precifely " requisite to produce the effect. Allowing, " therefore, God to be the author of the exist-" ence and order of the universe; it follows, " that he posses that precise degree of power, " intelligence, and benevolence, which appears " in his workmanship." And hence, from the present scene of things, apparently so full of ill and diforder, it is concluded, " That we have " no foundation for afcribing any attribute to " the Deity, but what is precifely commenfu-" rate with the imperfection of this world." With regard to mankind, he reafons differently. " In works of human art and contrivance, it is " admitted, that we can advance from the effect " to the caufe, and returning back from the " caufe, that we conclude new effects, which A a 2 " have

#### 280 · OUR KNOWLEDGE

" have not yet existed. Thus, for instance, " from the fight of a half-finished building, fur-" rounded with heaps of flones and mortar, " and all the infruments of mafonry, we natu-" rally conclude, that the building will be fi-" nithed, and receive all the farther improve-" ments which art can beftow upon it. But the " foundation of this reasoning is plainly, that " man is a being whom we know by experience, " and whofe motives and defigns we are ac-" quainted with, which enables us to draw ma-" ny inferences, concerning what may be ex-pected from him. But did we know man on-" ly from the fingle work or production which " we examine, we could not argue in this " manner; becaufe our knowledge of all the " qualities which we afcribe to him, being, up-" on that fupposition, derived from the work or " production, it is impossible they could point " any thing farther, or be the foundation of any " new inference."

SUPPOSING reafon to be our only guide in thefe matters, which is fuppofed by this philofopher in his argument, I cannot help feeing his reafoning to be juft. It appears to be true, that by no inference of reafon can I conclude any power or benevolence in the caufe, beyond what is difplayed in the effect. But this is no wonderful difcovery. The philofopher might have carried his argument a greater length. He might have

C,

į.

3

þ

2İ

n

3

'n

Ľ

ľ

3

f

ŀ

P

1

ą

1

b

ŝ

Ņ

ł

have observed, even with regard to a man I am perfectly acquainted with, that I cannot conclude, by any chain of reafoning, he will finish the house he has begun. It is to no purpose to nrge his temper and disposition. For from what principle of reason can I infer, that these will continue the fame as formerly? He might further have observed, that the difficulty is greater, with regard to a man I know nothing of. fupposing him to have begun the building. For what foundation have I to transfer the qualities of the perfons I am acquainted with to ftrangers? This furely is not performed by any procefs of reasoning. There is still a wider step : which is, that reason will not support me, in attributing to the Deity even that precife degree of power, intelligence, and benevolence, which appears in his workmanship. I find no inconfiftency in fuppoling, that a blind and undefigning caufe may be productive of excellent effects. It will, I presume, be difficult to produce a demonstration to the contrary. And supposing, at the inflant of operation, the Deity to have been endued with these properties, can we make out, by any argument a priori, that they are still fubfifting in him ? Nay, this fame philosopher might have gone a great way further, by obferving, when any thing comes into existence, that, by no process of reasoning, can we for much as infer any caufe of its existence.

#### A a 3

Bur

281

But happily for man, where reafon fails him, fense and intuition come to his affistance. By means of principles implanted in our nature, we are enabled to make the foregoing conclusions and inferences; as at full length is made out in fome of the foregoing effays. More particularly, power discovered in any object, is intuitively perceived to be a permanent quality, like figure or extension \*. Upon this account, power discovered by a fingle effect, is confidered as fufficient to produce the like effects, without end. Further, great power may be difcovered from a finall effect ; which holds even in bodily frength; as where an action is performed readily, and without effort. This is equally remarkable in wifdom and intelligence. A very fhort argument may unfold correctness of judgment, and a deep reach. The fame holds in art and skiil. Examining a slight piece of workmanship. done with tafte, we readily observe, that the artift was equal to a greater tafk. But it is most of all remarkable in the quality of benevolence. For even from a fingle effect, produced by an unknown caufe, which appears to be accurately adapted to fome good purpole, we neceffarily attribute to this caufe benevolence, as well as power and wildom +. The perception is indeed but weak, when it arifes from a fingle effect:

- \* Fifay upon our knowledge of future events.
- + Eilay of our idea of power, at the close.

but

5

.....

Q

ŀ

1

I

but still it is a clear and distinct perception of pure benevolence, without any mixture of malice : for fuch contradictory qualities are not readily afcribed to the fame caule. There may be a difficulty indeed, where the effect is of a mixed nature, partly ill, partly good; or where a variety of effects, having these opposite characters, proceed from the fame caufe. Such intricate cases cannot fail to imbarrass us. But as we must form fome fentiment, the refolution of the difficulty plainly is, that we must afcribe benevolence or malevolence to the caufe, from the prevalence of the one or other quality in the effects. If evil make the greater figure, we perceive the caufe to be malevolent, notwithstanding opposite instances of goodness. If, upon the whole, goodness be supereminent, we perceive the caufe to be benevolent; and are not moved by the crofs inftances of evil, which we endeavour to reconcile as we can with pure benevolence. It is indeed true, that where the opposite effects nearly balance each other, our perception cannot be entire upon either fide. But if good or evil greatly preponderate, the weight in the opposite scale goes for nothing : the perception is entire upon one fide or other. For it is the tendency of our perceptions, to reject a mixed character made up of benevolence and malevolence, unless where it is neceffarily preffed home upon us, by an equality of opposite effects,

Such

#### 284 OUR KNOWLEDGE

SUCH are the conclusions that we can with certainty draw; not indeed from reason, but from intuitive perception. So little are we acquainted with the effence and nature of things, that we cannot establish these conclusions upon any argument a priori. Nor would it be of great benefit to mankind, to have these conclufions demonstrated to them; few having either leifure or genius to deal in fuch profound fpeculations. It is more wifely ordered, that they appear to us intuitively certain. We perceive that they are true, and our perceptions have full authority over us. This is a folid foundation for our conviction of the benevolence of the Deity. If, from a fingle effect, pure benevolence in the caufe can be perceived ; what doubt can there be of the pure benevolence of the Deity, when we furvey his works, pregnant with good-will to mankind? Innumerable instances, of things wifely adapted to good purpofes, give us the ftrongest conviction of the goodnefs, as well as wildom of the Deity; which is joined with the firmest perfuasion of constancy and uniformity in his operations. A few crofs inftances, which to us, weak-fighted mortals, may appear of ill tendency, ought not, and cannot make us waver. When we know fo little of nature, it would be furprifing indeed, if we should be able to account for every event, and its final tendency. Unleis we were let into the counfels of

of the Almighty, we can never hope to unravel all the mysteries of the creation.

I SHALL add fome other confiderations, to confirm our belief of the pure benevolence of the Deity. And, in the first place, I venture to lay it down for a truth, that pure malice is a principle not to be found in human nature, far lefs in the Deity. The benevolence of man is indeed often checked and controlled by jealoufy, envy, and other felfish passions. But these are distinct from pure malice, which is not opposite to self-interest, but to pure benevolence. Now, the independent and all-fufficient nature of the Deity, fets him above all fuspicion of being liable even to envy, or the purfuit of any intereft, other than the general interest of his. creatures. Wants, weaknefs, and opposition of interests, are the causes of ill-will and malice among men. From all fuch influences the Deity must be exempted. And therefore, unless we fuppose him less perfect than the creatures he hath made, we cannot readily fuppofe, that there is any degree of malice in his nature.

THERE is a fecond confideration, which hath always afforded me great fatisfaction. Did natural evil prevail in reality, as much as it doth in appearance, we must expect, that the enlargement of natural knowledge should daily difcover new inflances of bad, as well as of good intention,

tention. But the fact is directly otherways. Our difcoveries afcertain us more and more of the benevolence of the Deity, by unfolding beautiful final causes without number ; while the appearances of ill intention gradually vanish, like a mist after the fun breaks out. Many things are now found to be curious in their contrivance. and productive of good effects, which formerly appeared uselefs, or perhaps of ill tendency. And, in the gradual progrefs of learning, we have the ftrongest reason to expect, that many more discoveries of the like kind will be made hereafter. This very confideration, had we nothing elfe to rely on, ought to make us reft with affurance upon the intuitive conviction we have of the benevolence of the Deity; without giving way to the perplexity of a few crofs appearances, which, in matters fo far beyond our comprehension, ought rationally to be ascribed to our own ignorance, and, by no means, to any malevolence in the Deity. In the progrefs of learning, the time may come, we have great reason to hope it will come, when all doubts and perplexities of this kind shall be fully cleared up.

I SHALL fatisfy myfelf with fuggeffing but one other confideration, That inferring a mixed nature in the Deity, from events which cannot be clearly reconciled to benevolence, is, at beft, new-moulding the Manichean fystem, by substituting, turing, in place of it, one really lefs plaufible. For I can, with greater facility, form a conception of two opposite powers governing the universe, than of one power endued with great goodness and great malevolence, which are principles repugnant to each other.

r t

> IT thus appears, that our conviction of this attribute of pure benevolence hath a wide and folid foundation. It is impressed upon us by intuitive perception, by every difcovery we make in the fcience of nature, and by every argument which is fuggested by reason and reflection. There is but one objection of any weight which can be moved against it, arising from the difficulty of accounting for natural and moral evil. It is observed above, that the objection, however it may puzzle, ought not to shake our faith in this attribute; because an argument from ignorance can never be a convincing argument in any cafe; and this therefore, in its ftrongest light, appears but in the shape of a difficulty, not of a folid objection. At the fame time, as the utmost labour of thought is well bestowed upon a fubject in which mankind is fo much interefted, I shall proceed to suggest some reflections, which may tend to fatisfy us, that the inftances commonly given of natural and moral evil, are not fo inconfistent with pure benevolence, as at first fight may be imagined.

> > ONE

ONE preliminary point must be fettled, which I prefume will be admitted without much hefitation. It certainly will not be thought inconfiftent, in any degree, with the pure benevolence of the Deity, that the world is filled with an endlefs variety of creatures, gradually afcending in the fcale of being, from the most groveling to the most glorious. To think that this affords an argument against pure benevolence, is in effect to think, that all inanimate beings ought to be endued with life and motion, and that all animate beings ought to be angels. If, at first view, it shall be thought, that infinite power and goodness cannot stop short of absolute perfection in their operations, and that the work of creation must be confined to the highest order of beings, in the highest perfection ; this thought will foon be corrected, by confidering, that, by this fuppolition, a great void is left, which, according to the prefent fystem of things, is filled with beings, and with life and motion. And, fuppoling the world to be replenished with the highest order of beings, created in the highest degree of perfection, it is certainly an act of more extensive benevolence, to complete the work of creation, by the addition of an infinity of creatures less perfect, than to leave a great blank betwixt beings of the highest order and nothing.

ł

THE imperfection, then, of a created being, abstractly ۱

ł

ŀ

đ

ł

j

7

đ,

έ

Ē

ł

E

đ

à

d

h

abstractly considered, impeaches none of the attributes of the Deity, whether power, wildom, or benevolence. And if fo, neither can pain, abstractly considered, be an impeachment, so far as it is the natural and neceffary confequence of imperfection. The government of the world is carried on by general laws, which produce constancy and uniformity in the operations of nature. Among many reasons for this, we can clearly discover one, which is unfolded in a former effay \*, that, were not nature uniform and constant, men, and other sensible beings, would be altogether at a loss how to conduct themfelves. Our nature is adjusted to these general laws; and must, therefore, be subjected to all their varieties, whether beneficial or hurtful. We are made fenfible beings, and therefore equally capable of pleasure and pain. And it must follow, from the very nature of the thing, that delicacy of perception, which is the fource of much pleafure, may be equally the fource of much pain. It is true, we cannot pronounce it to be a contradiction, that a being should be fusceptible of pleasure only, and not of pain. But no argument can be founded upon this fupposition, but what will conclude, that a creature, fuch as man, ought to have no place in the fcale of beings; which furely will not be maintained : for it is still better, that man be as

• Of our knowledge of future events.

ΒЬ

he

he is, than not be at all. It is further to be obferved in general, that averfion to pain is not fo great, at leaft in mankind, as to counterbalance every other appetite. Moft men would purchafe an additional fhare of happinefs, at the expence of fome pain. And therefore it can afford no argument against the benevolence of the Deity, that created beings, from their nature and condition, are capable of pain, fupposing, in the main, their life to be comfortable. Their state is still preferable to that of inanimate matter, capable neither of pleasure nor pain.

THUS then it appears, even from a general view of our subject, that natural evil affords no argument against the benevolence of the Deity. And this will appear still in a stronger light, when we go to particulars. It is fully laid open in the first estay, that the social affections, even when most painful, are accompanied with no degree of averfion, whether in the direct feeling, or in the after reflection. We value ourfelves the more for being fo conflituted ; being confcious that fuch a conftitution is right and meet for sociable creatures. Distresse, therefore, of this fort, cannot be called evils, when we have no averfion to them, and do not repine at them. And if these be laid aside, what may be justly termed natural evils, will be reduced within a small compass. They will be found to proceed necessarily, and by an established train of ĉ

Ċ.

2

٤

1

Ľ.

r T

ų

2

F

I

Ľ

£

¢

Ş

of causes and effects, either from the imperfection of our nature, or from the operation of general laws. Pain is not distributed through the world blindly, nor with any appearance of malice ; but ends, proportions, and measures. are observed in the distribution. Sensible marks of good tendency are confpicuous, even in the harshest dispensations of Providence, as well as in its general laws : and the good tendency of these general laws, is a fure pledge of benevolence, even in those instances where we may be at a lofs about their application. One thing is certain, that there is in man a natural principle to fubmit to these general laws, and their consequences. And were this principle cultivated as it ought to be, men would have the fame confciousness of right conduct, in submitting to the laws of the natural world, that they have in fubmitting to the laws of the moral world, and would as little repine at the distresses of the one kind, as at those of the other.

BUT justice is not done to the fubject, unlefs we proceed farther, to show, that pain and diftrefs are productive of manifold good ends, and that the prefent system cannot well be without them. In the first place, pain is necessary, as a monitor of what is hurtful and dangerous to life. Every man is trusted with the care of his own prefervation; and he would be ill qualified for this trust, were he left entirely to the guidance B b 2 of

#### 292 OUR KNOWLEDGE

of reason. He would die for want of food, were it not for the pain of hunger. And, but for the pain arifing from fear, he would precipitate himfelf, every moment, into the most destructive enterprifes. In the next place, pain is the great fanction of laws, both human and divine. There would be no order nor discipline in the world without it. In the third place, the diffreffes and disappointments which arise from the uncertainty of feafons, from the variable tempers of those we are connected with, and from other crofs accidents, are wonderfully well adapted to our conflitution, by keeping our hopes and fears in perpetual agitation. Man is an active being, and is not in his element, but when in variety of occupation. A constant and uniform tenor of life, without hopes or fears, however agreeable in itfelf, would foon bring on fatiety and difgust. Pain therefore is necessary, not only to enhance our pleasures, but to keep us in perpetual motion \*. And it is needlefs to obferve, a fecond

• One argument used to the difadvantage of Providence, I take to be a very firong one in its defence. It is objected, That forms and tempefts, unfrulful feafons, ferpents, fpiders, flies, and other noxious or troubleforme animals, with many more inflances of the like kind, difcover an imperfection in nature, because human life would be much easier without them. But the defign of Providence may clearly be perceived in this proceeding. The moticns of the fun and moon, in fhort, the whole fyftem of the univerfe, as far as philosophers have been able to difcover and obferve, are in the utmost degree of regularity and perfection; but where-ever God hath left to man the power of interposing a remedy by thought or labour, there he hath placed. things cond time, that, to complain of man's conflitution in this refpect, is, in other words, to complain, that there is fuch a creature as man in the fcale of being. To mention but one other thing, pain and diffrefs have a wonderful tendency to advance the interefts of fociety. Grief, compaffion, and fympathy, are firong connecting principles, by which every individual is made fubfervient to the general good of the whole fpecies.

I SHALL close this branch of my fubject with a general reflection, which is referved to the laft place, becaufe, in my apprehension, it brings the argument for the benevolence of the Deity within a very narrow compass. When we run over what we know of the formation and government of this world, the inftances are without number, of good intention, and of confummate wildom, in adjusting things to good ends and purpofes. And it is equally true, that, as we advance in knowledge, scenes of this kind multiply upon us. This observation is enforced above. But I must now observe, that there is not a fingle inftance to be met with, which can be justly afcribed to malevolence or bad intention. Many evils may be pointed out ; evils at least as to us. But when the most is made of

i

D

things in a flate of imperfection, on purpole to fir up human induftry, without which life would flagnate, or indeed rather could not fubfift at all: Curis acuunt mortalia corda.

Swift's thoughts on various fubjects.

Bb 3

Digitized by Google

fuch

fuch inftances, they appear to be confequences only from general laws, which regard the whole more than particulars; and therefore are not marks of malevolence in the author and governor of the world. Were there any doubt about the tendency of fuch inftances, it would be more rational to afcribe them to want of power, than want of benevolence, which is fo confpicuous in other infrances. But we cannot rationally afcribe them to either, but to the pre-eftablifhed order and conflitution of things, and to the necessary imperfection of all created beings. And after all, laying the greatest weight upon these natural evils that can reasonably be deinanded, the account stands thus. Instances without number of benevolence, in the frame and government of this world, fo direct and clear, as not to admit of the smallest dubiety. On the other fide natural evils are stated, which, at best, are very doubtful instances of malevolence, and may be afcribed, perhaps obfcurely, to another caufe. In balancing this account, where the evil appearances are fo far outnumbered by the good, why fhould we hefitate a moment to ascribe pure benevolence to the Deity, and to conclude thefe evils to be neceffary defects in a good conflitution; especially when it is fo repugnant to our natural perceptions, to ascribe great benevolence and great malevolence to the fame being ?

IT.

۵

ĺ.

0Í

œ

R.

ÿ

Ē.

ķ

ì

Ø

đ

ł

TI A

i

IT will be remarked, that, in anfwering the foregoing objection to the benevolence of the Deity, I have avoided urging any argument from our future existence; though it affords a fruitful field of comfort, greatly overbalancing the transfitory evils of this life. But I should fcarce think it fair reasoning, to urge such topics upon this subject; which would be arguing in a circle; because the benevolence of the Deity is the only folid foundation upon which we can build a future existence.

HAVING discussed what occurred upon natural evil, we come now to confider moral evil as an objection against the benevolence of the Deity. And fome writers carry this objection fo far, as to conclude, that God is the caufe of moral evil, fince he hath given man a conflitution, by which moral evil doth, and must abound. It is certainly no fatisfying answer to this objection, that moral evil is the necessary confequence of human liberty; when it is a very poffible fupposition, that man might have been endued with a moral fenfe, fo lively and ftrong, as to be abfolutely authoritative over his actions. Waving, therefore, the argument from human liberty, we must look about for a more folid answer to the objection; which will not be difficult, when we confider this matter, as laid down in a former effay \*. It is there made out, it is hoped, to the

· Effay upon liberty and neceffity.

fatisfaction

fatisfaction of the reader, that human actions. are, all of them, directed by general laws, which have an operation, not lefs infallible, than those laws have which govern mere matter; and though this branch of our nature is kept out of fight, yet that in reality we are necessary agents. Thus all things in the moral as well as material world proceed according to fettled laws eftablished by Providence. We have a just ground of conviction, that all matters are by Providence ordered in the best manner, and therefore that even human vices and frailties are made to answer wife and benevolent purpofes. Every thing poffeffes its proper place in the divine plan. All our actions contribute equally to carry on the great and good defigns of our Maker; and, therefore, there is nothing which in his fight is ill; at leaft, nothing which is ill upon the whole.

CONSIDERING the objection in the foregoing light, which is the true one, it lofes its force. For it certainly will not be maintained as an argument againft the goodnefs of the Deity, that he endued man with a fenfe of moral evil; which, in reality, is one of the greateft bleffings beftowed upon him, and which eminently diftinguifhes him from the brute creation.

But if, now, the objection be turned into another fhape, and it be demanded, Why was not every man endued with fo throng a fenfe of morality, rality, as to be completely authoritative over all his principles of action, which would prevent much remorfe to himfelf, and much mischief to others ? it is answered, first, That this would not be fufficient for an exact regularity of conduct, unless man's judgment of right and wrong were also infallible. For, as long as we differ about what is yours, and what is mine, injustice must be the confequence, in many instances, however innocent we be. But, in the next place, to complain of a defect in the moral fenfe, is to complain, that we are not perfect creatures. And, if this complaint be well founded, we may, with equal justice, complain, that our understanding is but moderate, and that, in general, our powers and faculties are limited. Why should imperfection in the moral fense be urged as an objection, when all our fenfes, internal and external, are imperfect ? In fhort, if this complaint be, in any measure, just, it must go the length, as above obferved, to prove, that it is not confistent with the benevolence of the Deity, to create fuch a being as man.

Digitized by Google

ş

CON-



### CONCLUSION.

W E have thus gone through a variety of fubjects, not without labour, and expence of thought. And now, like a traveller, who, after examining the different parts of a country, afcends fome eminence to review the whole; let us refresh ourfelves, by looking back, and enjoying the difcoveries we have made.

THE subject of these estays is man. We have formed no imaginary schemes for exalting, or for depressing his nature. The inquiry has been, whether his capacities and powers fuit his prefent circumstances, and fit him for acting a proper part in life ? We begin with examining fome of the great fprings of action. Upon accurate fcrutiny, it is found, that felf-love, or defire of good, is not our fole principle of action ; but that we are furnished, besides, with a variety of impelling powers. Mingled in fociety, for the convenience of mutual help, it is neceffary that we feel for each other. But as the feeling for another's forrow, cannot but be painful, here is traced an admirable contrivance to reconcile us to this virtuous pain, by taking off that averfion to pain, which, in all other cafes, is an over-ruling principle. This explains a feemingly frange phænomenon, that we should feek entertainment

tainment from representations which immerse us in the deepest affliction. From man as a focial. we proceed to man as a moral agent. We find him fensible of beauty, in different ranks and orders ; and eminently fensible of it, in its highest order. that of fentiment, action, and character. But the fense of moral beauty is not alone fufficient. The importance of morality requires fome ftronger principle to guard it; fome checks and restraints from vice, more severe than mere disapprobation. These are not wanting. To the sense of beauty, is superadded a sense of obligation, a perception of right and wrong, which constitutes a law within us. This law injoins the primary virtues, those which are effential to fociety, under the strictest fanctions. Pain, the ftrongest monitor, is here employed to check tranfgreffion ; whilst in the fublimer more heroic virtues, where strict obligation ends, pleafure is employed to reward the performance. No action is made a duty, to which we are not an. tecedently disposed by some principle. An exact proportion is maintained betwixt the flrength of our internal principles, and their ulefulnefs. From felf, the object of our most vigorous principles, affection fpreads through all the connections we have with others; till, among perfons indifferent and unknown, it is totally funk. After it is thus loft, by the diftance of particular objects, nature has an admirable artifice for reviving its force, by directing it on the abstract idea

300

;. E

la Gei

int

Ż.

17

T:

17,

3

té.

j**e** 

dt

NR.

de

nî,

t.

â

ø

d

ġ

Ø.

1

j,

ģ

ľ

1 L

ł.

idea of a public and a whole; which, though faint and obscure in the conception, is yet equal to any of our ideas in force and energy. Man is, in this manner, furnished for acting a proper and useful part in the fystem to which he belongs. But this fystem could not be regulated upon any pre-adjusted plan, the actions of man could not proceed with any order, nor be fubject to any government, unless all men were determined by motives. At the fame time, man could not answer the purposes of active life, without conceiving himfelf to be a free agent. Hence the necessity of giving his mind a peculiar cast; in which we cannot but difcern the brighteft characters of defigning wifdom. By having his perceptions formed upon a delusive fense of contingency, scope is given for a far richer and more diversified scene of action, than the confcioufnefs of necessity could have admitted. Having made out, that morals are established on an immoveable foundation, we proceed to show, by what inward powers we are led to the knowledge and belief of fome of the most important truths; particularly, the existence of the Deity. To this we pave the way, by a full preparation of reasoning. We first consider the nature of that act of the mind which is termed belief; of which the immediate foundation is the teftimonv of our fenfes. If the testimony they give to the real existence of a material world, be a mere illusion, as some have held, all belief founded Сc on

ł

on our own perceptions is at an end. Hence appears the abfurdity of denying the authority of our fenses. And here we find full fatisfaction. For, in other cafes, where there is any thing like artifice in the conduct of nature, means are afforded, both of difcovering the truth, and of discovering the end for which truth is artfully concealed : for nature never deceives us but for our good. In the cafe of external existences, we find nothing, after the strictest fcrutiny, but suppositions, and fallacious reafonings, opposed to the clearest testimony which nature can give. Dispersing, with no great labour, that philosophic dust which sceptics have raifed about material substance, we find, upon examination, that we have a conception of it, not lefs clear than of qualities ; both being equally difplayed to us by the fenfe of fight. But belief is not more folidly founded upon our external fenfes, than upon our internal feelings. Not the greateft fceptic ever doubted of his own perfonal identity, continued through the fucceffive periods of life; of his being the fame man this year he was the last : which, however, is a difcovery made by no reafoning ; refting wholly upon an inward sense and confciousness of the fact. Upon a like foundation refts our belief of caule and effect. No relation is more familiar than this, nor fooner takes hold of the mind. Yet certain it is, that no reasoning, no experience, can discover the power or energy of what we term

302

I

Y

ŀ

Ŋ

n È

II N

12

÷

t)

Ŀ.

pa li

g t

k

11

ø

戻

ΩÓ

1

ŝ

Д,

E.

ω.

term a cause, when we attempt to trace it to its fource. It is neceffary for the well-being of man, first, that he should perceive the objects which exist around him; and next, that he should perceive them in their true state, not detached and loofe, but as caufes and effects, as producing and produced. Nature hath furnished us with external fenfes, for the perception of objects, not only as fimply exifting, but as exifting thus related to each other. Nor without fuch faculties could we ever have attained the idea of cause and effect. The same provision is made by nature in another cafe, not lefs remarkable than the former. Our fenses can only inform us of objects as prefently exifting. Yet nothing is more common, than from our knowledge of the prefent, and our experience of the past, to reafon about the future. Now, all reafonings about futurity, which have fuch extensive influence on our conduct, would be utterly deftitute of a foundation, were we not endued with a fense of uniformity and constancy in the operations of nature. A fecret inftinct founds this conclusion, that the future will be like the past. Thus there is effablished a marvellous harmony betwixt our inward perceptions and the courfe of external events. In the above-mentioned instances, we attribute to our boasted reason, what, in truth, is performed by fense or inflinct. Without knowing it to be fuch, we trust to it. We act upon its informations, with equal confi-Cc2 dence.

dence, as we do upon the clearest conclusions of reason : and, in fact, it does not oftener mislead us. Nature thus most effectually provides for our instruction, in things the most necessary to be known. But this is not all. We purfue the argument into an intuitive perception of the Deity. He hath not left us to collect his existence from abstract or perplexed arguments, but makes us perceive intuitively that he exists. When external objects are prefented to our view, fome are immediately diffinguished to be effects, not by any process or deduction of reasoning, but merely by fight, which gives us the perception of cause and effect. Just in the same manner, this whole world is feen or difcovered to be an effect produced by fome invisible defigning cause. The evidence of this perception cannot be rejected, without introducing universal scepticifm; without overthrowing all that is built upon perceptions, which, in many capital inflances, govern our judgments and actions; and without obliging us to doubt of those things, of which no man ever doubted. For, as in viewing an external object, the fenfe of fight produces the idea of fubftance, as well as of quality; as by an intuitive perception we difcover fome things to be effects requiring a caule; as, from experience of the paft, inftinct prompts us to judge of the future; in fine, as by the fense of identity the reader is confcious of being the fame perfon he was when he began to read : as all thefe

304

these conclusions, I fay, upon which mankind rest with the fullest assurance, are the dictates of fenfes external and internal; in the very fame way, and upon the fame evidence, we conclude the existence of a first Supreme Cause. Reason, when applied to, gives us all its aid, both to confirm the certainty of his being, and to difcover his perfections. From effects fo great and fo good as those we see through the universe, we necessarily infer the cause to be both great and good. Mixed or imperfect qualities cannot belong to him. The difficulties from apparent evil, are found capable of a fatisfactory folution. All the general laws of the universe, are confessedly wife and good. Pain is found not to be useful only, but necessary, in the present fystem. If this be an argument of an imperfect ftate, yet must it not be admitted, that, somewhere in the scale of existence, an imperfect order of beings must be found ? And why not man fuch a being ? unlefs we extravagantly demand, that, to prove the benevolence of the Deity, all the poffible orders of being should be advanced to the top of the scale, and all be left void and wafte below; no life, no existence allowed, except what is perfect. The more of nature is explored and known, the lefs of evil appears. New difcoveries of wifdom, order, and good intention, are the never-failing effects of enlarged knowledge; an intimation, not obscure, of its being owing to our imperfect and bounded views, that evil is Cc3 *fuppofed* 

fuppofed to take place at all. Now, when we confider all thefe things in one complex view; fo many firiking inflances of final caufes; fuch undeniable proofs both of wife defign, and fkilful execution; banifhing cold diffruft of the great univerfal caufe, are we not raifed to the higheft admiration ! Doth not this fubject powerfully kindle a noble enthufiafm ? And doth it not encourage us to attempt a higher ftrain ?

" FOR do not all these wonders, O Eternal " Mind ! Sovereign Architect of all ! form a " bymn to thy praife ? If in the dead inanimate " works of nature, thou art feen ; if in the ver-" dure of the fields, and the azure of the fkies, " the ignorant ruftic admire thy creative power ; " how blind must that man be, who, looking " into his own nature, contemplating this living " flructure, this moral frame, difcerns not thy " forming hand ? What various and complica-" ted machinery is here ! and regulated with " what exquisite art ! Whilft man pursues hap-" pinefs as his chief aim, thou bendeft felf-love " into the focial direction. Thou infufeft the " generous principle, which makes him feel for " forrows not his own : nor feels he only, but, " ftrange indeed ! takes delight in rushing into " foreign mifery; and, with pleafure, goes to " drop the painful tear over real or imaginary " wo. Thy divine hand thus ftrongly drew " the connecting tye, and by fympathy linked " map

1

i

1

ģ

ł

**r** hi

7

Ú.

e

1

b

50

b

i.

ni pi T

いい

「「「「「「「」」

bł

۶Ì

" man to man; that nothing might be folitary " or defolate in thy world; but all tend and " work toward mutual affociation. For this " great end he is not left to a loofe or arbitrary " range of will. Thy wife decree hath erected " within him a throne for virtue. There thou " haft not decked her with beauty only to his " admiring eye, but thrown around her the aw-" ful effulgence of authority divine. Her per-" fuafions have the force of a precept ; and her " precepts are a law indifpenfable. Man feels " himfelf bound by this law, ftrict and immu-" table : and yet the privilege of fupererogating " is left; a field opened for free and generous " action; in which, performing a glorious " course, he may attain the high reward, by " thee allotted, of inward honour and felf-effi-" mation. Nothing is made fuperfluoufly fevere, " nothing left dangeroufly loofe, in thy moral " inftitution ; but every active principle made to " know its proper place. In just proportion, " man's affections diverge from himfelf to ob-" jects around him. Where the diverging rays, " too widely fcattered, begin to lofe their " warmth; collecting them again by the idea of " a public, a country, or the universe, thou re-" kindleft the dying flame. Converging eagerly " to this point, behold how intenfe they glow ! " and man, though indifferent to each remote " particular, burns with zeal for the whole. All " things are by thee pre-ordained, great Mover " of

308

" of all ! Throughout the wide expanse, every " living creature runs a destin'd course. Whilst " all, under a law irrefiftible, fulfil thy decrees, " man alone feems to himfelf exempt; free to " turn and bend his courfe at will. Yet is he " not exempt : but, under the impression of " freedom, ministers, in every action, to thy " decree omnipotent, as much as the rolling " fun, or ebbing flood. What ftrange contra-" dictions are, in thy great fcheme, reconciled ! " what glaring oppofites made to agree ! Necef-" fity and liberty meet in the fame agent, yet " interfere not. Man, though free from con-" ftraint, is under the bonds of necessity. He " discovers himself to be a necessary agent, " and yet acts with perfect liberty. Within the " heart of man thou hast placed thy lamp, to " direct his otherways uncertain fteps. By this " light he is not only affured of the existence. " and entertained with all the glories of the ma-" terial world, but is enabled to penetrate into " the recelles of nature. He perceives objects " joined together by the mysterious link of cause " and effect. The connecting principle, though " he can never explain, he is made to perceive, " and is thus inftructed, how to refer even things " unknown, to their proper origin. Nay, en-" dued with a prophetic fpirit, he foretells " things to come. Where reafon is unavailing, " inftinct comes in aid, and beftows a power of " divination, which discovers the future by the " paft.

## CONCLUSION.

Ń

ŋ

Ķ

2

!! {

ł

Í,

k

D

" paft. Thus thou gradually lifteft him up to " the knowledge of thyfelf. The plain and " fimple fenfe, which, in the most obvious ef-" fect, reads and perceives a caufe, brings him " ftraight to thee, the first great cause, the an-" cient of days, the eternal fource of all. Thou " prefenteft thyfelf to us, and we cannot avoid " thee. We must doubt of our own exist-" ence, if we call in question thine. We fee " thee by thine own light. We fee thee, not " exifting only, but in wifdom and in benevo-" lence supreme, as in existence, first. As spots " in the fun's bright orb, fo in the universal " plan, fcattered evils are loft in the blaze of " fuperabundant goodnefs. Even, by the re-" fearch of human reason, weak as it is, those " feeming evils diminish and fly away apace. " Objects, fuppofed fuperfluous or noxious, " have assumed a beneficial aspect. How much " more, to thine all-penetrating eye, must all ap-" pear excellent and fair ! It must be fo. "We cannot doubt. Neither imperfection nor " malice dwell with thee. Thou appointeft as " falutary, what we lament as painful. Even " the follies and vices of men minister to thy " wife defigns: and as at the beginning of days " thou faweft, fo thou feeft and pronounceft ftill, " that every thing thou hast made is good."



Digitized by Google

,

• • 1 . . . Digitized by Google

